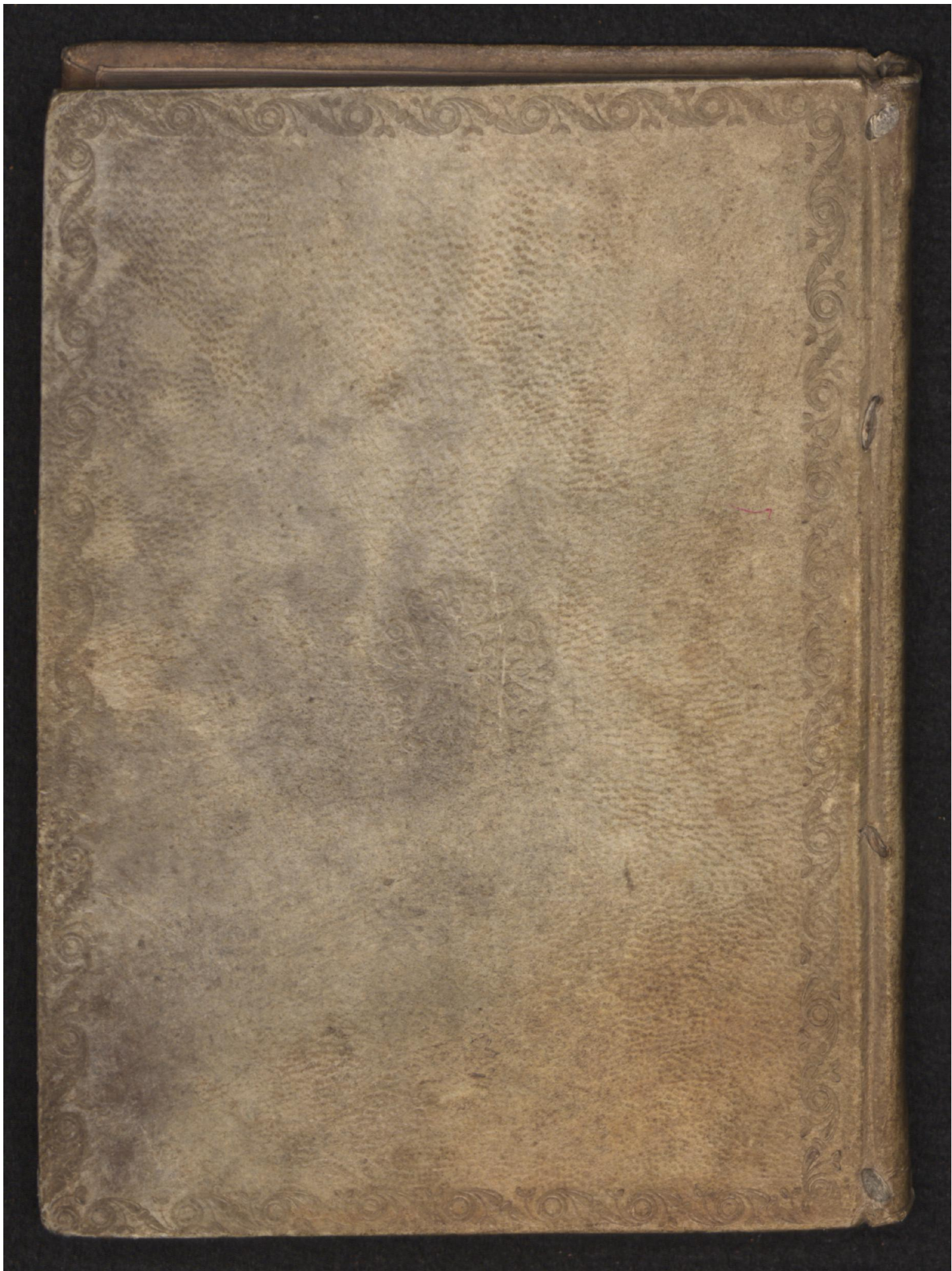




Early European Books, Copyright © 2009 ProQuest LLC.  
Images reproduced by courtesy of the Royal Library, Copenhagen.  
LN 810 4° copy 2





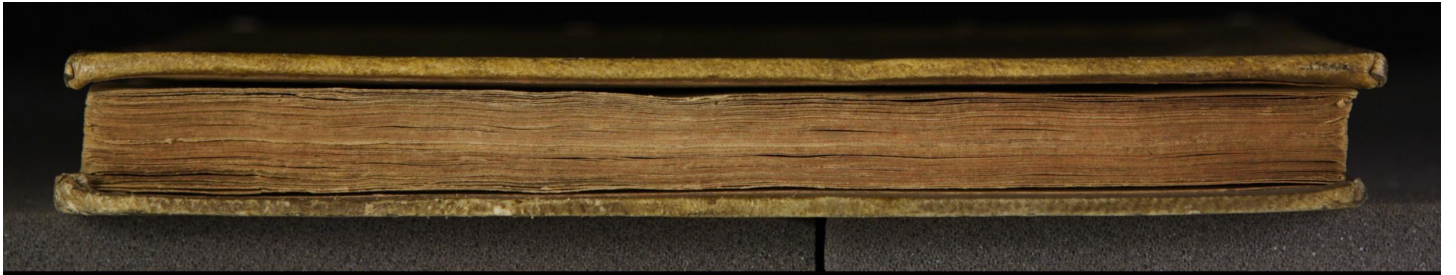


Early European Books, Copyright © 2009 ProQuest LLC.  
Images reproduced by courtesy of the Royal Library, Copenhagen.  
LN 810 4° copy 2





Early European Books, Copyright © 2009 ProQuest LLC.  
Images reproduced by courtesy of the Royal Library, Copenhagen.  
LN 810 4° copy 2



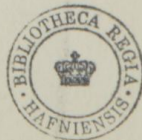
Early European Books, Copyright © 2009 ProQuest LLC.  
Images reproduced by courtesy of the Royal Library, Copenhagen.  
LN 810 4<sup>o</sup> copy 2

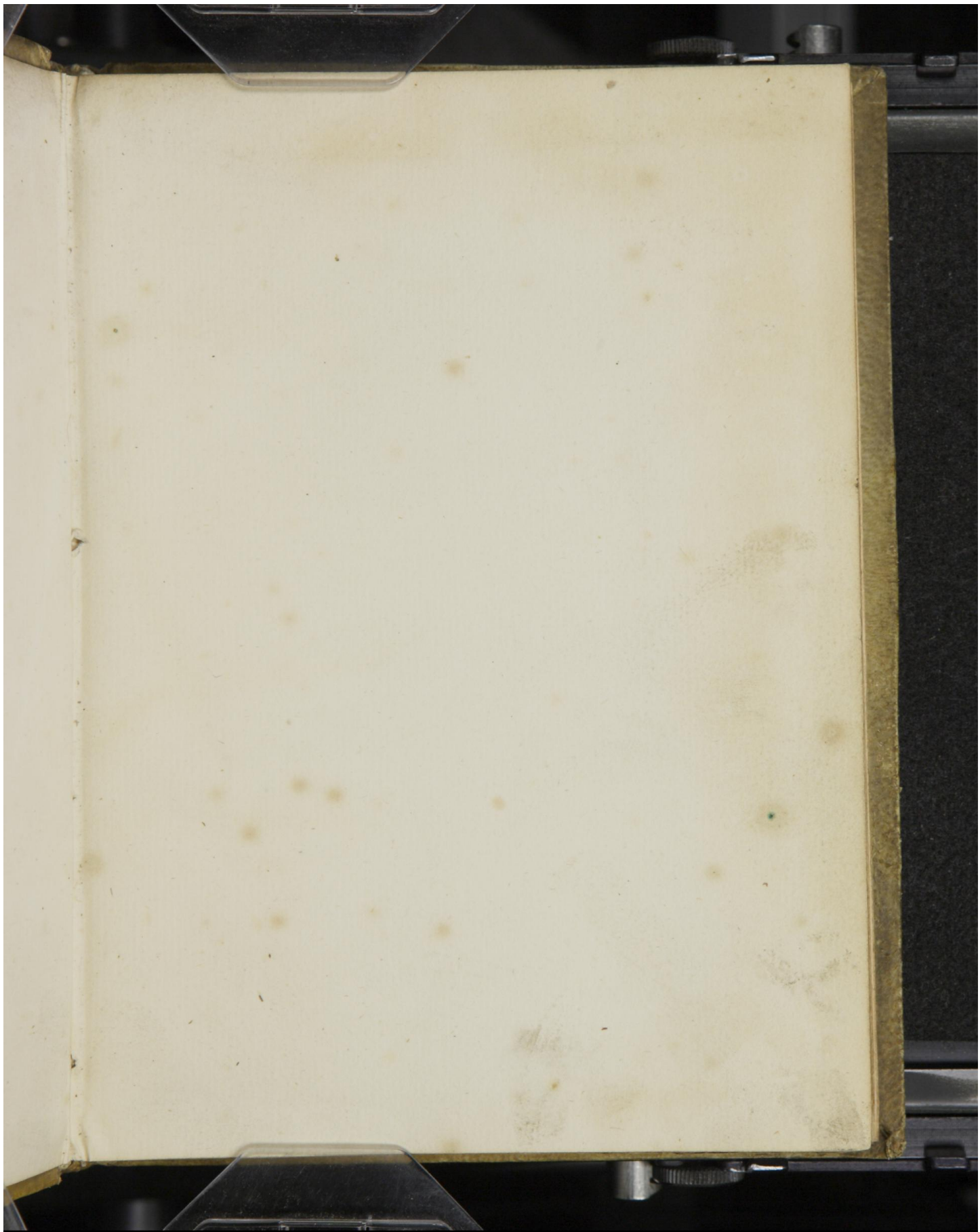


1. - 337

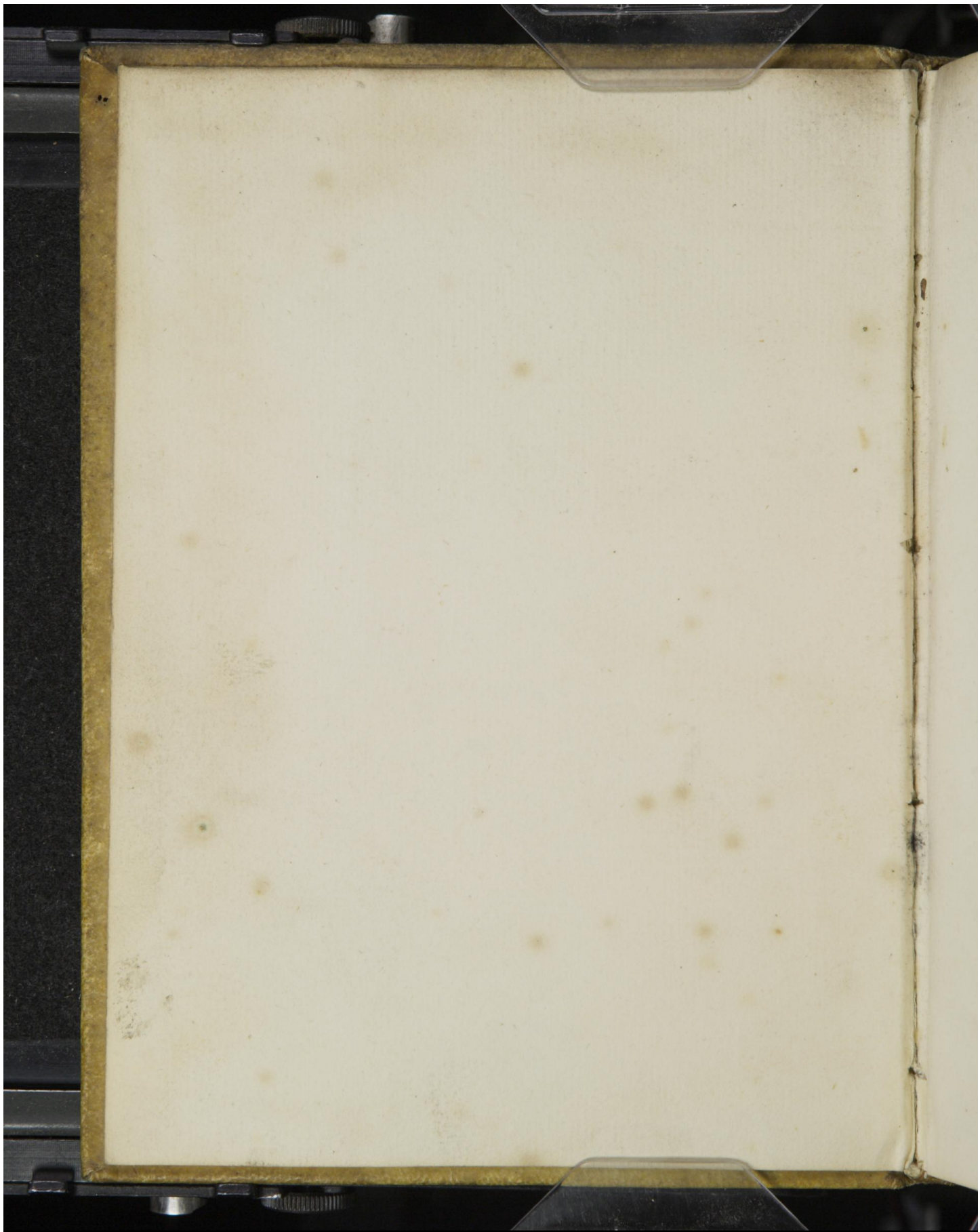
LN 810

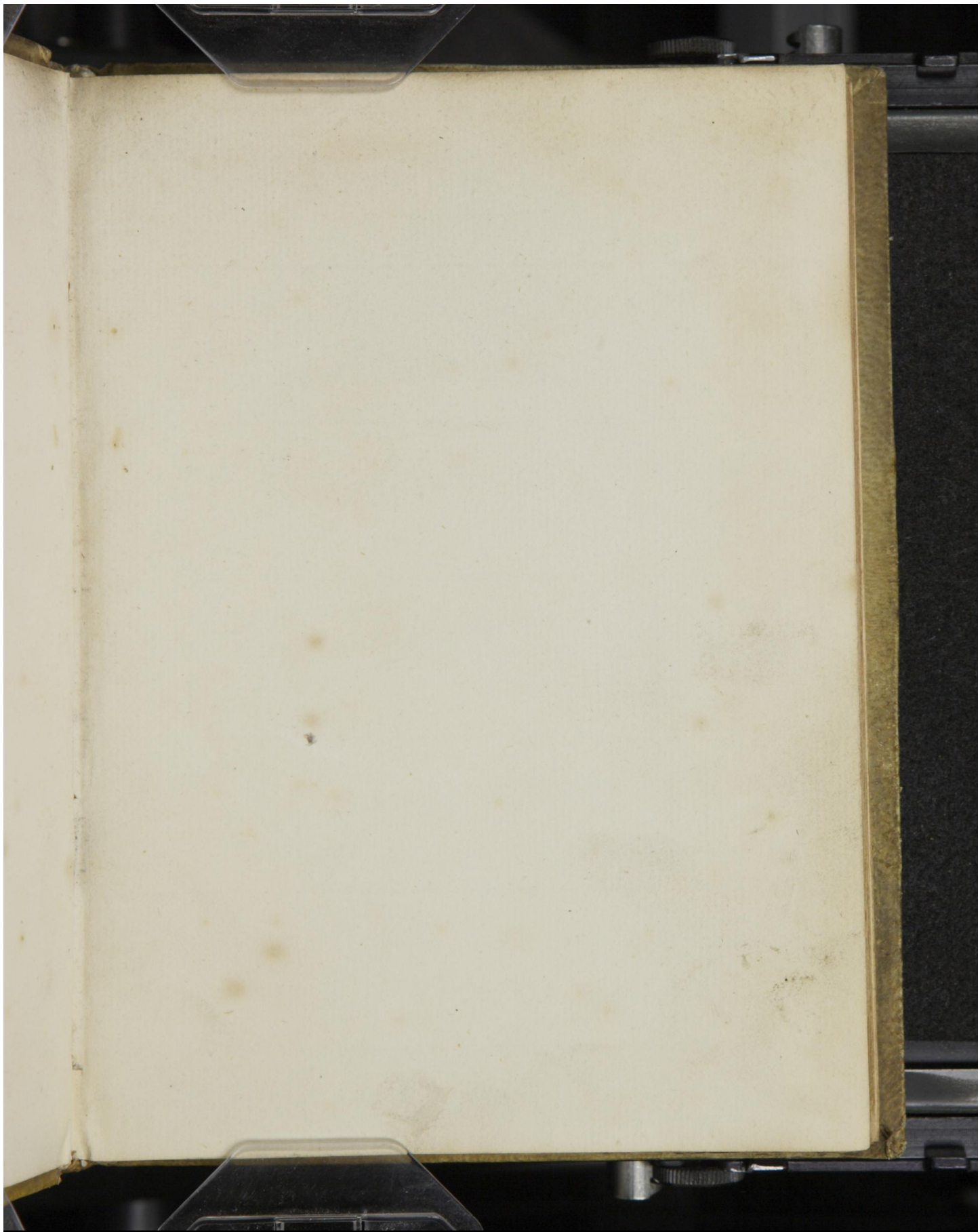
ex. 2



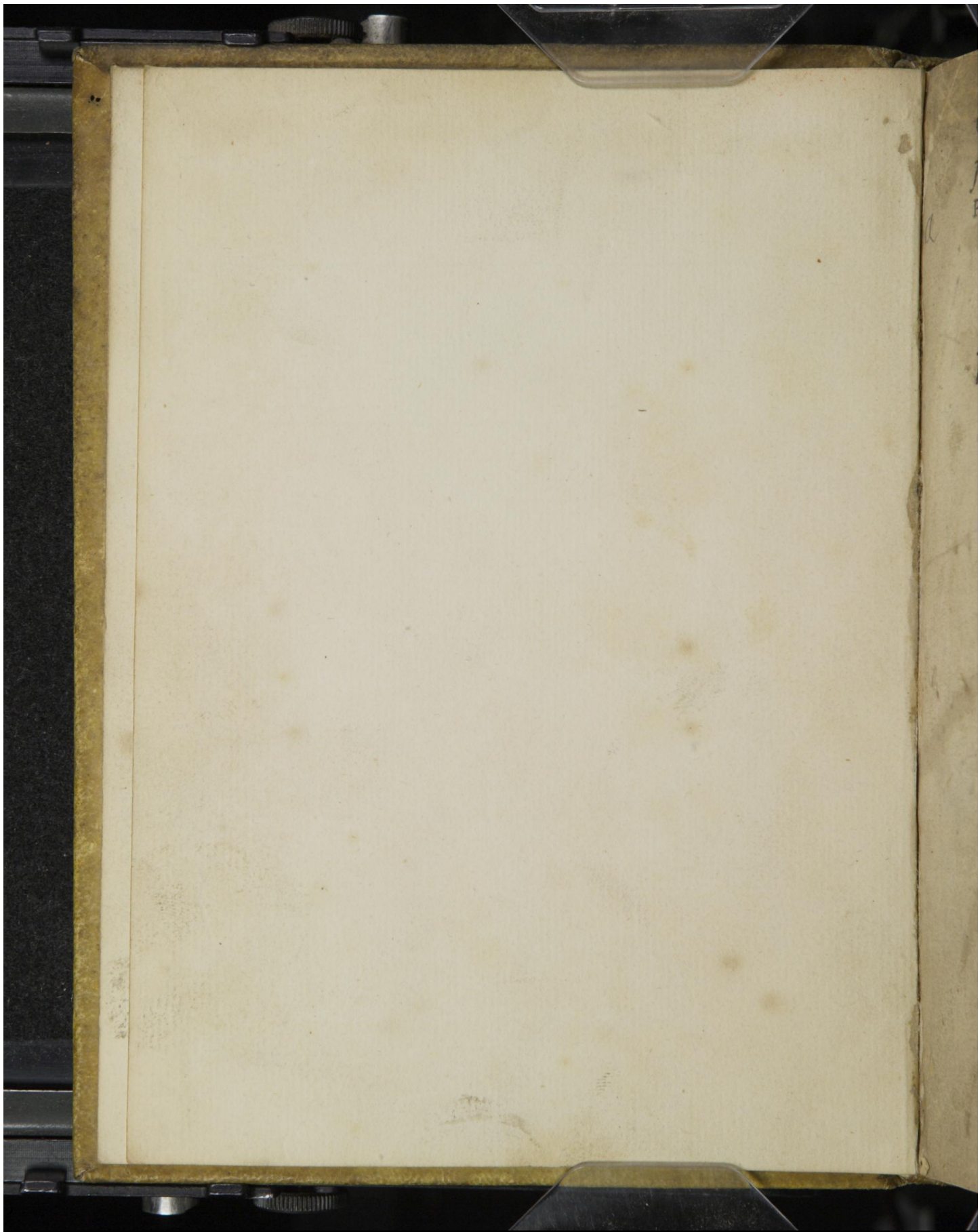














*A LEARNED AND  
fruitefull Commentarie vpon the E-  
pistle of Iames the Apostle, vvherein are diligently and  
profitably entreated all such matters and chiefe com-  
mon places of Religion as are tou-  
ched in the same E-  
pistle :*

*Written in Latine by the learned  
Clerke Nicholas Hemminge, professour of Diui-  
nitie in the Vniuersitie of Hafnie, and  
nevly translated into English  
by VV. G.*



*Maffray*

**PRINTED AT**  
*London by Thomas Woodcocke, and  
Gregorie Seton, and are to be solde at the signe  
of the blacke Beare in Paules  
Churchyarde.*

ANNO. 1577.

*Julij 1632*

*Maffray*







To the godly and reuerend Father,

and faythfull Minister of Christ, M. Alexander Novvell,  
Deane of the Cathedrall Church of S. Paule in London.

W. Gace wisheth grace and peace from God  
the father through Christ Ie-  
sus our Lorde.



OD FROM THE BEGINNING, hath as in a most cleare and euident glasse, sette forth himselfe to be beholden and knowne of vs, euen in his creatures, & in the orderly course of the worlde. For when we see and consider the vnmeasurable greatnes of the worlde, and the partes thereof to be so framed, as they could not possibly in beautie be fayrer, nor for profit better: we vnderstande theriby the omnipotent power of God in creating them, his diuine wisdom in ordering and disposing them, his infinite goodnes in continually preferuing them, that they runne not to ruine and vtter decay, but are by him vpholden, euen to the necessarie vse and sustentation of mans lyfe. Although this creation of the worlde, and the maruaylous ordering and preferuing thereof were sufficient whereby men might knowe God, and worship him being knowvne, or else be without excuse: yet it hath pleased God of his great mercie to giue vnto vs his worde, wherein he hath more plainly and fully reuealed himselfe, and his will, to our most singular commoditie and comfort. For we through the fall of our first parentes being become blinde in vnderstanding, corrupt in desiring, and wicked in working, are by the worde of God fruitfully receyued, lightned in our myndes, reformed in our affections, and ordered aright in our doings: in so much as the Princely Prophet Dauid sayth, that the meanes whereby a yong man shall clense his waye, is to rule himselfe after this worde, which worde also he pronounceth to be his delight and his counsellor, yea he perceyued it to be of such vertue and excellencie, that he preferreth it before all worldly treasures whatsoeuer: I loue, sayth he, thy commaundements aboue golde and precious stone. Agayne, thy lawe is dearer vnto me then thousandes of golde and siluer. But I mynde not to enter here into the worthy commendation of this worde, or to rehearse the manifolde and most singular commodities, which redounde to the godly thereby. Onely that which I haue mentioned out of Dauid may suffice to declare that it is a treasure of all other most precious.

Forasmuch then as the worde of God is a treasure so excellent, what

A.ii.

shall



## The Epistle.

shall we thinke or say of the true and sincere Preachers and expounders thereof? VVe acknowledge great friendship in them, by whose meanes we attayne to an earthly commoditie, and howe shall we be affected towarde them, which open to vs the way to an heauenly treasure? VVe thinke our selues much beholden to those, which minister vnto vs the foode of this fraile life: but vyhat recompence shall we render vnto them, by whose meanes we come to enioy the foode of euerlasting lyfe? VVherefore right worshipfull, if I should render a reason of my labour bestowed in translating this treatise into the english tongue, I thinke it were sufficient if I should say no more, but that the word of God is therein soundly and sincerely expounded. Although I may descend vnto particular pointes, and shew other weightie causes thereof. For you are not ignoraunt howe the Papists both haue bin and also be grieuous enemies to the doctrine of iustification by faythe onely in Christ, pretending for their chiefe defence the testimonie of S. Iames, where he seemeth to attribute iustification to workes and not to fayth onely, whose authoritie they haue wrongfully wrested and misinterpreted. VVhereby they haue not onely erre d themselues, but also haue caused many other to erre. VVhich false interpretation of theirs is in this treatise very learnedly and throughly improued, and the meaning of the Apostle truly and playnely declared.

Againe, your wisdom doth well know, that the mysteries of God are wisely and discretely to be disposed, and not onely the doctrine of fayth faithfully to be taught, but also the doctrine of workes diligently to be vrged, both to stoppe the sclaunders mouths of many prating Papists, and also to remedie many abuses very rise among vs. For whereas the sincere preachers of Gods worde doe according to the Scriptures teach, that the bloud of Christ is a sufficient salue for the fore of sinne, and that we are iustified by fayth alone in him, without mens merits, workes, or satisfactions: many sclaundering Papists are not ashamed most falsly to affirme, that they are louers of lusts, preachers of present pleasure, and giuers of libertie to all licentious liuing, and making no store of good workes, doe cast onely fayth vnder mens elbowes to leane vpon. VVhen as the true preachers haue alway preached, and all the writings of the godly haue most diligently taught, that that fayth, which is not liuely and fruitefull of good workes did neuer profite any but to the increase of their owne damnation: and contrariwise, that that fayth, whereby alone according to the Scriptures, they teach that we are iustified, hath good workes necessarily accompanying it, not as causes of our saluation, but as necessarie fruites of a liuely fayth, as is also in this treatise of S. Iames very learnedly and diligently declared. VVhereby not onely the Papists are admonished,

that



## The Epistle.

that they doe not open their lying lips so wrongfully to rayle vpon the true preachers of Gods word, but also many other are aduertised of their dutie, who by profession are Christians, but in life more then prophane, who are not ashamed to say: if faith iustifie without works, then let vs worke nothing, but let vs onely beleeu and doe what we list, and so like carnall and carelesse liuers they turne the libertie of the Spirite into wantonnes and fleshy libertie. But let these men vnderstand, that such prophane profession and carelesse contempt dooth highly displease almightie God, and is diligently detected and sharply reprovod of his faythfull ministers, both in wordes and writings, whose wholesome admonitions let them carefully regard, and be aduertised and brought thereby to follow in workes that vvhich they profes in vwordes, least they deceiue them selues, and at the last reape most bitter frutes of their fayned fayth.

Not onely these are in this present treatise admonished of their dutie, but many other most profitable poyntes of Christian doctrine and godly instructions are learnedly handled and liuely set forth therein, vvhich the Christian readers may learne to direct their doinges, and order their life according to the prescript rule of Gods vvorde. As for them vvhich obstinately refuse, or at the least vvife little regarde such godly instructions as God hath in these dayes (his name be highlye prayfed therefore) by his faythfull Ministers both by preaching and vvriting offered vnto them: let them remember that they that are of God heare and receiue Gods vvorde, and if they doe the contrarie that they are not of God: let them knowv, if they be novv wearie of it and come to the lothing of it, that their soule is fallen into a dangerous disease. For as a good appetite to naturall foode is a token of the helth of the body, and to refuse and loth the same is a sure signe of some sickenes or disease: so is it likevvise in the soule refusing or lothing the heauenly foode of Gods vvorde. Again let them call to minde, that it vvas aunsvvered to the rich glutton being tormented in hell, vvhich he vvould haue one sent from the dead to admonish his brethren, least they came into that torment, that his brethren had Moses and the Prophets, vvhom they ought to heare, if they vvould auoyde the like ferie flames and hellish torments. Let them assure themselues that the day vvill come, vvhich Christ Iesus shall vvith vspeakable maiestie and infinite power come to iudge the quicke and the dead, vvhich from the furthest corners of the vvorld shall be heard the sound of the trumpet, vvhich vvith all shall be called to the iudgement seate, then the secretes of all heartes shall be layde open, and the doinges of euery man playnely discouered. Then the vngodly and vvicked ones, vvhich haue in this life despised the vvorde of God,

A. iij.

neg-



## The Epistle.

neglected his commaundements and will contayned therein, and not repented them of their wickednes, shall in stede of comfort on euery side feele extreme dread and horrour. If they looke behinde them they shall see the world consuming with fire, if they looke on the right hand, they shall perceiue a sinfull conscience accusing them, if they turne to the left, there shall be the deuel readye to receiue them into endles paynes, if they looke before them, they shall see a terrible and iust iudge comming to iudge them according to their wicked works. VWhereas the godly voyde of all these dreadeuill terrours, shall see a most louing Sauour, who shall then admitte them wholly into the full fruition of eternall ioy and blessednes.

Seing then the case thus standeth, it is requisite that all men, which minde to be saued, doe search the Scriptures which testife of this Sauour, doe di'igently heare and reade the worde of God, doe vse such meanes as God hath appoynted to come to the knowledge thereof, and knowing it, doe follow it in their life and conuersation, yea and doe become most heartely thankfull vnto God, that it hath pleased him in mercy to sende to reigne ouer vs, not a tyrannicall Herod to oppresse vs, but a most gracious Princes so in peace and godlynes to gouerne vs, that the Gospell of Iesus Christ hath not in any age had freer passage, nor hath bin more abundantly and truly preached and set forth, which God for his Christes sake graunt long to continue. So farre then ought all to be of from despising or neglecting the worde and the Preachers and Ministers thereof, that they ought to acknowledge the enioying of it to be an inestimable benefite of God, and to shewe themselues thankfull for so great a benefite, not onely in hearing, reading, and meditating of it, but also according to their abilitye and power it setting in forth and making it knowne vnto other. VWherefore I, according to that small talent, which God hath bestowed ypon me, haue employed my trauell in translating this treatise into our mother toung, that those my godly country men, vvhich are ignorant of the Latine tongue may become partakers of such Christian doctrine, wholesome admonitions, and godly instructions as are contayned therein: VWhich treatise, reuerend Father, I thought good to publishe the rather vnder the protection of your name, that therby it might be the more vwillingly accepted, and the better lyked of many, vwho haue of a long time knowne you to be a learned and faythfull preacher of Gods vvorde, and an earnest furtherer of all godlynes vvhich God graunt that you may long be, to the great aduancement of his glory, the singular commoditie of his Church, and the dayly comfort of your ovvne conscience.

Your worshipps humbly at commaundment,  
VV. Gace.



The Argument of the Epistle Fol. 1.  
of James the Apostle.

**FOUR** THINGS IN MY IVDGEMENT are diligently to be vveighed and considered in the beginning of the exposition of euery treatise of the holy Scripture, to vvit, vvhich is the author of it, vvhich occasion there vvas to vwrite it, vvhich is the ende and purpose of it, and vvhich is the maner, methode, or order of handling it. For these four being aptly and rightly declared are as it vvere a certaine light before the reader to guide him to the entrance of euery treatise of the holy Scripture. Of these therefore I vwill speake in order, vvhich by the argument of this Epistle may be the better vnderstande.

The author of this Epistle vvas James the Apostle, vvhich is called the brother of the Lord. He, together with the rest of the Apostles, vvas not onely the space of three yeares instructed by the voyce and spirite of the Lorde: but also after the resurrection of Christ vwith the other Apostles receiued the holy Ghost, and a commaundement to preach the Gospell to all nations, and on the day of Pentecost vvas againe by a visible signe authorised and confirmed in his Apostleship. Hereof it appeareth vvhich is to be iudged of this Epistle, to vvit, that vve must giue no lesse credit to it, then to the voyce of God, for the author thereof is the Apostle of Iesus Christ, vvhich at the last sealed the Gospell of Christ vwith his blood. For vvhich he taught Christ to bee the conquerer of death, and to sit at the right hand of God in heauen, the Ievves did cast stones at him, and at the length he kneeling vpon his knees, and praying for his persecutours, vvas slayne vwith a fullers clubbe, and that not long before the cite vvas assaulted by Vespasian. VVhether therefore thou considerest the ministerie of God, vvhich in this man did labour, eyther his life, eyther his confession, or his ende, thou hast a testimonie of the infallible truth of his doctrine.

The occasiō which James had to write, seemeth to be double, one the persecutiō of the Church, an other the hypocrisie in many. How great the persecution of the Church vvas in the time of James, the Ecclesiasticall historie doth teache at large. For the Ievves were not onely afflicted by being dispersed through the vvhole vvorlde: but also they vvere euen almost ouervhelmed vwith diuers tentations of heretikes and deuels. For as inwardly they vvere molested by false brethren: so outwardly by tyrānes they vvere prouoked to forsake their professiō, sometime vwith threatninges sometime vwith promises. Hypocrisie also did not a litle offend them. For many did professe Christ, and acknowledging him to be a fauour, did extoll his benefites, but they liued vwithout a liuely fayth and repentance. VVith these troubles vvas the Church then tossed, vwith these vexations vvas the spouse of Christ

B.j.

then

The author of this Epistle vvhich is, and vvhich he vvas.

Of vvhich authoritie this Epistle is, and from vvhence the same authoritie is taken.

The occasion vvhich moued James to vwrite this Epistle, is of two sortes.



## The argument.

then afflicted, which when James did see, he tooke therupon occasion to write, that by some meanes he might remedy these euils.

The end and purpose of the Apostle.

Of this occasion the scope and purpose of James in this Epistle may be easily vnderstande. For all which he here sayth, tendeth vnto this ende, not onely to confirme and strengthen Christians and those that be godly in deede, agaynst the offence of affliction, vvhom he exhorteth vnto patience, that they should not, being ouercome vwith tē- tations, giue ouer their confession, but rather looke to the euent and end of affliction: but also that he may call backe hypocrites from their error, whom as he teacheth hovv vayne the boasting of fayth is vwith- out a liuely confidence in God and the true fruites of faith: so he exhorteth them vnto maners vworthy of a Christian profession, and dehorteth them from the vices contrarie thereunto, except they had rather suffer iust punishment for their stubbornnesse and disobedience. The maner or order of handling is somevvhath free and bold, as is vvont to be in exhorting and reprovving, vvhich I vwill diligently shev in the exposition of euerie chapter.

The maner and order.

The profite & vse of this Epistle.

But hovv necessarie this Epistle is in our churches at this daye, he may easily vnderstand: vvhich seeth that the most part that vvil be called Christians, doe boast of a vayne and a dead faith: VWhich foolishnesse our Apostle doth discouer and most iustly condemne. Agayne, he vvhich dayly beholdeth vwith hovv many and sundry vices (discipline more and more decaying) christian people are polluted and defiled, will without all dout confesse, that there is neede of some James, who may freely and boldly reprehend and condemne these sins which are so common and rife among vs. Besides all this the author of this Epistle deserueth to be called a glasse of godlinesse. For whether thou considerest his office, eyther beholdest his life, eyther thinkest vpon the constancie in his confession, or weyest the ende of his life, thou hast both whereat greatly to maruell, and also vvhich thou mayest desire to imitate and follow, if thou wilt be counted a true Christian. Thus much concerning the argument, profite, and vse of this Epistle. Now it remaineth to declare why it is called Generall. The Epistles of the Apostles, of Peter two, of Iohn the first, one of Iude, and this of James are called Generall, bicause they were not appoynted and written to certayne cities and persons (as all the Epistles of Paule and the second and third of Iohn were) but were giuen to all the godly indifferently, dispersed in diuers places through the whole world. Some doe call these Epistles Canonicall, thereby to put a difference betweene them and the Epistles of Paule, who are in a manifest error. For the Epistles of Paule are no lesse Canonicall then the Epistles of James, the Epistles of Peter, or of Iohn, bicause that whatsoeuer we read in the Epistles of the Apostles, we ought to embrace it as a canon or rule of the truth.

The author of this Epistle is a glasse of godlinesse & why.

Why this Epistle & certayne other in the newe Testament are called Generall.

The



¶ The summe of the fyrst  
Chapter.

**H**E exhorteth Christians that they faynte not vnder the  
beaue burden of tentations, and that by shewing the re-  
warde of ouercomming tentation. And least any impute the  
beginning of tentation to God, he teacheth both from whence  
tentation proceedeth, and also that all good thinges are of  
God, who hath begotten vs agayne by his word.

The order and partes of the  
fyrst Chapter.

**T**he first part of this chapter is an inscription. The second  
a proposition, wherein he perswadeth Christians not to be  
ouercome with tentations. In the third because it may some-  
time be, that some being seduced with error doe yeelde vn-  
to tentation, he admonisheth that wisdome is to be asked of  
God by fayth without wauering. In the fourth, least anye  
being discouraged with pouertie and contempt, doe yeeld vn-  
to tentations he exhorteth both rich and poore vnto true hu-  
militie. In the fift is set forth the reward of ouercomming  
tentation, and the beginning thereof is also shewed, that the  
deceites of it may be the better auoyded. The sixt is an ad-  
monition taken of contraries, that God is not the author of  
tentation, but rather of all goodnesse, which he confirmeth  
as it were by a testimony of the goodnesse of God, setting  
forth the benefite of our regeneration. And so this chapter  
tendeth to one ende and purpose, to wit, that we  
our selues to be ouerwhelmed with the hea-  
tentations. To this ende also serue the re<sup>st</sup>

The partes of  
this chapter  
are six, which  
are here in or-  
der rehearsed.







Epistle of S. James.

3

doth admonish vs, that the Church of Christ in this world is not tyed (as the Pope thinketh) to any certaine place or succession, but rather to the word of God, to the sacramentes, and to obedience toward the Gospell.

2 My brethren, count it all ioy, vwhen ye fall into diuers tentations.

The proposition of the first exhortation, to witte, that the beleeuing Jewes be not ouercome of tentations. This exhortation is worthely made first vnto them, who being driuen out of their countrey, were oppressed with diuers iniuries of their neighbours. Whereas he saith not simply, be not overcome of tentations, or some such like thing, but count it all, that is, full ioye, when you fall into diuers tentations: he putteth a difference betweene the effectes of the tentation of the godly and of the vngodly. For as the ende of the tentation of the vngodly is sorrowfullnes and desperation: so the ende of the tentation of the godly is ioye and victorie ouer tentation. When he sayth diuers, he signifieth that the beleuers are not tried with one kinde of tentation, but with many and diuers, wherefore it becommeth Christians to watch, least that they being compassed about with diuersitie of tentations, doe fall into the handes of the aduersarie.

The ends of the tentation of the godlye and of the vngodly are diuers.

3 Knowvng that the trying of your fayth bringeth forth patience.

A reason of the proposition taken of the effectes of the tentations of the godly. For first tentation is, as it were a touchstone, whereby the faith of Christians is tryed, we haue an example in Abraham. For they whose faith is not true, in the time of tentation doe depart, according to the parable in the Gospell, *Matth. 13*. Contrariwise they, whose faith is firme and sure, are made stronger throughe tentations, for they are vphelde by the spirite of God. Moreover, fayth being tryed worketh patience, that is, maketh that we doe patiently suffer affliction, for hope of

The effectes of the tentation of the godly.

B.iii.

our

Christ, roade,

things. author of thereof, e Apostle n he wye. The au- was the Christ, the scate dispersed de of the first the of Babyl- into Ba- ded onely in did re- and there, rth write, is in the the surest reering a- difference comes of ncluded of e, but it and ioye come are her they abroade doth

cap 7  
190



cap 1 679

# A Commentarie vpon the

our deliuerance: Whereupon Paule saith, that experience bringeth forth hope, and hope maketh not ashamed, that is, faileth vs not, that at the length we shoulde be ashamed in the sight of the sonne of God.

4 And let patience haue her perfect vvorke.

We must continue constant vnto the ende. Matth. 10.22.

This is an exhortation to perseuerance in suffering, for the Apostle will haue the godly to continue constant in patience euen vnto the ende, bicause he is blessed that indureth to the ende. The word patience in this place signifieth constancie and perseuerance in patience. The effectie therefore of patience is constant perseuerance.

That ye may be perfect and entire lacking nothing.

The finall effect of the crosse of the godly.

The ende and effect of the affliction of the godly is here declared, which is the perfecting of vs in Christ. For all our life time we ought to endenour to come vnto this perfection, which is dayly polished and fined with affliction as with the instrument of God, vntill suche time as it be fully finished. This place doth admonish vs to speake some what of Christian perfection, which James defineth here to be entirenes. But bicause the Papists doe but trifle and dally concerning Christian perfection, it is expedient rightly to instruct the godly, that they may know what they ought to thinke concerning the same. We must vnderstand therefore, that there is a double perfection commended to vs in the Scripture, whereof the one is absolute, and is an imputation of the perfect righteoussesse and obedience of our Lorde Iesus Christe. For as Christ by his obedience on the Crosse doth make a full satisfaction for sinnes: so his obedience to the law imputeth righteoussesse, so that euerie one that beleueth, may appeare perfect and righteous in the sighte of God through the perfection and righteoussesse of Christ. We hauing confidence in this perfection, doe looke for the glory of immortalicie. An other perfectio there is in the regenerate

Two kinds of perfection mentioned in the scripture.



Epistle of S. James.

4

cap 1.3 4

nerate which the word of God commendeth to all the godlye: walke before me (saith the Lorde unto our father Abraham) and be thou perfect. Christ saith: ye shall therefore be perfect, as your father which is in heaven is perfect. There is no doubt, thou wilt say, concerning the commandement, but it is demaunded wherin that perfection doth consist. We must understand that Paule Philip. 3. vbleth the word of perfection after two sortes. For he sayth thus: Not as though I had already attained to it, neyther were already perfect: but I follow if I may comprehend that for whose sake also I am comprehended of Christ Iesus. Brethren I count not my selfe that I haue attained to it, but one thing I doe: I forget that which is behind, and endeuor my selfe vnto that which is before, and follow hard toward the marke, for the price of the his calling of God in Christe Iesus. Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus minded. In these wordes of Paule there is a most manifest contradiction, vnlesse we will admitte, that there be moze kindes of perfection then one. First he saith that he is not perfecte, afterwarde hee numbryeth him selfe among them that be perfect. There is therefore a double vse of this worde, for sometime one is sayd to be perfect in substance, as we say that a childe is a perfect man, that is in substance. Sometime one is said to be perfect in quantitie or degrees, as when we say: no man hath perfect obedience according to the lawe of God. After the first maner Abraham, David, Paule, the theefe on the crosse, &c. were perfect. According to the latter maner no man in this life hath bin found perfect, beside Christ Iesus alone, but that perfection we shal obtaine in the lyfe euerlasting, where we shal be made like vnto Christe. But that the state of grace in this life is perfection after a sorte, it may be taught partly by descriptions, partly by examples. Of the wordes of Paule which I haue rehearsed, this definition may be gathered, that Christian perfection is to forsake

Gen. 17. 1.

Math. 5. 48.

Philip. 3. 12. 13. 14. 15.

Definitions of christian perfection taken out of the wordes of Paule.

B. iiii.

sake

This book was translated into Black Print

erience  
ed, that  
shamed

ring, for  
ant in pa-  
that indu-  
acc signifi-  
The effie

nothing.

only is here  
it. For all  
to this per-  
affliction  
me as it be  
peake some  
firmly here  
we but trifle  
is expedient  
know what  
He must vn-  
dicion com-  
one is abso-  
oluteousness

For as  
make a full  
law impu-  
ment, may  
er of God  
just. We  
y the glo-  
the rege-  
nerate



cap. 1. vers. 9

# A Commentarie vpon the

take time, to rest vpon Christ by fayth, and to please to-  
ward the marke for the price of the hie calling of God in  
Christ Iesus. Or as Paul defineth it in the Epistle to  
Timothe: Christian perfection is to fight a good fight, to  
haue faith and a good conscience. Whosoeuer therefore  
forsaketh sinne, renounceth lewd and wycked desires, com-  
forteth himselfe with confidence & trust in the mediatur,  
and endeuoureth to approue his whole lyfe before God,  
if his conscience be not defiled: according to the vse of the  
Scripture he is called perfect, and that in substance, not  
in degrees: For Christ onely was perfect both in sub-  
stance and in degrees. But this may more euidently be  
perceiued by examplies. It was sayd vnto Abraham *Ge-  
nes. 17.* walke before me and be thou perfect. How Abra-  
ham obeyed this precept, and how he walked before God  
and was perfect, it is playnely declared *Genes. 22.* by the  
commaundment of God, and the obedience of Abraham.  
But that this may be the better vnderstande, let vs annex  
the wordes of Moses: Behold therefore, saith the Lord to  
Abraham, take now thine onely sonne Isaac whom thou lo-  
uest, and gette thee vnto the land of Moriah, and offer him  
there for a burnt offering vpon one of the mountains, which I  
will shew thee. Here thou hast the precept, the obedience  
followeth. Then Abraham rose vp early in the morning,  
and saddled his Ass, and tooke two of his seruants with him,  
and Isaac his sonne, and cloue wood for the burnt offering,  
and rose vp and went to the place which God had tolde him.  
And a little after: Then Abraham tooke the wood of the  
burnt offering, and layde it vpon Isaac. And afterwarde it  
followeth: And he bound Isaac his sonne, and layd him, on  
the altar vpon the wood, and Abraham stretching forth his  
hand, tooke the knife to kill his sonne. By this example of  
Abraham it plainly appeareth, what that perfection is,  
which the Lord requireth of his seruants in this life. God  
commaunded that Abraham, who was iustified before by  
fayth

**X** Who may be  
sayd to be  
perfect accord-  
ing to the  
vse of the  
Scriptures.

A liuely ex-  
ample of chri-  
stian perfecti-  
on.

Gen. 22. 2. 3.  
4. 6. 9.

The com-  
mandment  
of God to A-  
braham.

The obedi-  
ence of Abra-  
ham to vvarde  
God.



Epistle of S. James.

5

faith, should kill his sonne. Abraham had nothing more deare unto him then this his sonne, nothing more sweete and pleasant. For he was the onely comfort of life to the olde man Abraham, and to the most holy matron Sara. What doth Abraham here? He beholdeth and considereth two things, God commanding, and his sonne, then whom nothing was more deare unto him in this life. But he preferreth the commaundement of God before the life of his sonne. Hereupon therfore I conclude, that the perfection of the Saintes in this life is, by faith so to obey God, that they preferre obedience towarde God before all worldlye thinges, whatsoeuer. They which are so affected, are by good right counted perfect. But they which at the commaundement of God will not kill so much as one of their affections, how can they boast of this perfection? Let vs propound an other example out of the newe Testament. Chyist Matth. 19. saith to the yong man of whom he was asked concerning the obtaining of eternall life: *If thou wilt be perfect, go, sel that thou hast and giue it to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come and follow me.* Chyist knew that this rich yong man was to muche addicted to riches, and that he could not easily turne his minde from them. That therfore this yong man may vnderstand how farre he is of from the true perfection of obedience toward the lawe, the Lorde biddeth him forsake his riches and follow him. The Lorde seemeth here to make two partes of perfection, to wit, to leaue and forsake riches, and to follow Chyist. But we must know that as it was a personall precept, in the which Abraham was commaunded to kill his sonne: so is this personall which is here giuen to this yong man. Wherefore neither of them particularly is to be transferred to the generall definition of perfection, but generally onely, otherwise neither Noe, neyther Dauid, nor Paule had bine perfect. Wherefore we will apply these examples to the generall definition

What vve must doe if vve vwill be counted perfect in this life.

X

Another example vvhich by perfection and the partes thereof may be perceiued. Matth. 19. 21.

C. i. after

please to  
if God in  
Epistle to  
ad light, to  
therefore  
fines, com-  
mediator,  
foye God,  
the use of the  
distance, not  
both in lib-  
idencie be  
Abraham Ge-  
How Abra-  
before God  
22. by the  
of Abraham.  
let vs amerc  
the Lord to  
honn. should  
and offer him  
ains, which I  
the obedience  
the morning,  
is with him,  
urst offering,  
ad tolde him.  
wood of the  
fretwarde it  
laid him on  
ing forth his  
example of  
rfection is,  
is life. God  
before by  
faith



cap 2 vey 3

## A Commentarie vpon the

after this manner : As Abraham, bicause by fayth he preferred obedience toward God before the life of his moite deare and onely sonne, is sayd to be perfect, and the yong man following Christ, if he had preferred pouertie and liberalitie toward the pooze before his riches, had bine perfect according to the sentence of Christe : so euerye one which by a true fayth preferreth obedience toward God, before all thinges of this world, is sayde in the Scripture to be perfect. And on the contrarie. They which preferre worldly thinges, their owne affections, honour, glozie, pleasures, and diuers other deceits, before obedience toward God, are vnperfect, yea, they doe but in vaine glozpe of the name of Christians. These thinges agree with those which we haue before mentioned out of Paule, of which also we gather this definition of Christian perfection:

Who is sayde to be perfect and who to be vnperfect.

The definition of christi-an perfection.

Two parts of christian perfection.

Christian perfection is, imperfection being acknowledged, to preferre obedience towarde God by fayth in Christ before all worldly thinges, and to make good and allowable the whole lyfe before God. Of this christian perfection, Christ maketh two partes, to wit : to followe him, which is done by true conuersion : and to preferre obedience towarde him, before those thinges which are euen most deare vnto vs. And hitherto of christian perfection concerning the substance. But we shall then be perfect in degrees when the sonne of God shall appeare, to whome we shall be like, bicause we shall see him as he is, and euery one that hath his hope reposed in him, doth purifie himselfe, euen as he is pure.

5 If any of you lacke vvisedom, let him aske of God, vvhich giueth to all men liberally, and reprocheth no man, and it shall be giuen him.

To what ende wisedome is to be asked of God.

Least that any man pretende ignozaunce, whereby he endureth not tentation, the Apostle biddeth that he which hath not wisedome, doe aske it of God, and that vnto this ende, that he may not onely vnderstande howe to behaue himselfe



Epistle of S. James.

6

himselfe in tentations, least that being pressed downe with the heauie burden of them, he doe faint and be overcome: but also that he may knowe for what ende and purpose God suffreth his to be tried with affliction, least that he be depriued of the fruite thereof. God (saith he) giueth liberally, for he seeketh not any recompence, but onely is liberall of his mere goodnesse and bounteousnesse, and doth not after the maner of men, vphayde any with the benefites whiche he hath bountifullly bestowed, so as hee continue thankfull. If thou demaund what wisdom that is, by which we are taught and instructed to beare tentations patiently: I aunswere that it consisteth in knowledge and sense of feeling, knowledge is to vnderstand by the word of God that in all tentation and affliction both the iudgement and mercie of God are to be considered. The iudgement is, that we vnderstand that we are tempted and oppressed with diuers afflictions bicause of our sinnes. *Thou dost chasten man, saith the psalmist, rebuking him for sinne.* Mercy is that we may know that it is the will of God, that we should be vexed with tentations and afflictions, that we may repent vs of our sinnes, and not perish with the wicked world. For the Apostle speaketh thus, *1. Cor. II. When we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord, bicause we shoulde not be condemned with the worlde.* The sense of feeling of wisdom, is to feele comfort and consolation in the minde, throughe the holpe Ghoste, who supporteth vs in affliction, that we fall not, and vpholdeth vs with hope of our deliuerance to come, as we see in Job, who when he was oppressed with affliction, did comforte himselfe with this trust and confidence: *I am sure that my redemer liueth, and that I shall rise out of the earth in the latter day.* Hereupon Paule writeth to Timoche: *Remember that Iesus Christ was raised againe from the dead.*

6 But let him aske in fayth, and vvauer not.

He prescribeth howe wisdom is to be asked of God, to  
C.ii. wit,

Wisdom that teacheth to be patient in affliction consisteth in two poyntes.

The first point

Howe the iudgement of God is to be considered in afflictions. Psalm. 39. 11.

What we must know concerning the mercy of God in affliction.

The second point of wisdom in affliction.

Iob. 19. 25.

2. Tim. 2. 8.

Handwritten note: *Page 6*

the pre-  
moste  
the yong  
tie and li-  
vine per-  
uerpe one  
ard God,  
Scripture  
ch preferre  
ur, glorie,  
edience to  
aine glorie  
with those  
of which  
fection:  
acknow-  
by sayth in  
good and  
his chistian  
to followe  
preferre o-  
ch are euen  
a perfection  
e perfect in  
to whome  
is, and ene-  
purifie him  
ke of God,  
reprocheth  
whereby he  
at he which  
e unto this  
to behane  
himselfe



cap 1. vers 7

## A Commentarie vpon the

God the foun-  
taine of vvise-  
dome and all  
goodnesse.

Hovv al good  
things are to  
be obtayned  
at the handes  
of God.

A vaine thing  
to seeke after  
more media-  
tours.

Our faith must  
not vvauer in  
prayer and  
vvby.

wit, in faith without wauering. This place containeth many poyntes of doctrine: for first it teacheth that God is the fountaine of all wisdom, yea and of all goodnesse. Secondly, it sheweth that he is liberall to communicate of the fountaine of his goodnesse to them that doe aske. Also it declareth that prayer proceeding from faith, is the ordinarie meane by whiche we may obtaine and receiue good thinges at the hand of God. Agayne, it giueth to vnderstand that in prayer is required faith, which resteth vpon the goodnesse of the mediatur. Furthermore of this place is gathered, that all douting is farre to be removed from prayer: for he which douteth or wauereth when he prayeth, doth onely poure out wordes vnprofitably, and prayeth not effectually, whereupon this also followeth, that if we must not waver nor dout in prayer, it is but in vayne to make more mediators. For they which seeke after more mediators, doe thinke that they are not heard for the one and onely mediator Christ. Moreover with this saying of James disagreeeth the opinion of the Papists, who goe about to make faith and douting to agree together. To these may be added that all thinges that pertaine to the saluation of our soules, are to be asked without any conditio. Finally, the opinion of the Stoicks is here confuted, concerning the necessitie of the falling out of thinges: for as wisdom is here promised to him that asketh it by faith, so the wisdom wherof mention is here made, is not giuen to him that doth not aske it.

For he that vvauereth, is like a vvaue of the sea, tost of the vvinde, and caried avvay.

7 Neither let that man thinke that he shall recceyue any thing of the Lorde.

This is a reason, why in prayer he requireth fayth without wauering: for he which wauereth, saythe he, is compared to a waue of the sea, that is, he is vnconstant. For as the waue of the sea is drituen sometime into this coast,



Epistle of S. James.

7

coast, sometime into that, according as the winde and the raging of the sea is: so a man douting now thinketh this thing, shortly after his minde being changed, he thinketh an other thing, euen as he is driuen on with erroneous doctrine and blinde affections. Such a man praieth in bayne, bicause he is destitute of true faith. These things s ought to admonish vs of constancie, both in doctrine and also in godly exercises. But perhaps some man will object and saye: there is douting in euerie man therefore there is a firme and constant fayth without wauering in no man. I aunswere that according to diuers principles both may be, both stedfast faith and doubting. For if thou doest respect the spirite in the regenerate, fayth is a firme consent nothing wauering: But if thou lokest vnto the flesh, doubts do oftentimes arise, which are the works of y flesh, agaynst which the works of the spirit do strue. We haue an exaple of cyther of these in Abraham. Ro. 4.

An obiection.

The aunswes.

Both faith & vauering are in the regenerate in diuers respects

8 A double minded man is vnstable in all his vvayes. He is here sayde to be a double minded man, which doubteth of the doctrine or wyll of God, such a one bicause he is vnconstant in all his doinges, therefore hath he no stablenesse, or constancie in his prayer. Let vs therefore in this place note that the foundation of all godly actions, yea and of that most excellent worke of prayer, is constancie in the doctrine concerning the will of God, & in fayth.

VVho is double minded,

The foundation of all godly doings.

9 Let the brother of louv degree reioyce in that he is exalted:

10 Againe, he that is rich, in that he is made louv: for as the floure of the grasse, shall he vanish avay.

Bicause both pouertie by which all kinde of calamitie as by a particular or an example, is signified, and also riches, by the name whereof all prosperous succes in this lyfe is vnderstande, may minister matter of tentation: he doth veru conueniently preuent an obiection, and teacheth both, that is, the pooze man and also the rich. He teacheth the

The poore mans lesson.

C.iii.

pooze



### A Commentarie vpon the

The rich mans lesson.

2. Cor. 10. 17.  
An obiection.

The answer.

The glorie of riches fitlye compared to the floure that soone fadeth away.

pooze man not to fasten his eyes vpon the calamitie of this present life, but rather to consider that he is exalted, whereby hereafter he being made the son of God, shall be advanced vnto the glory of immortality. He teacheth the rich mā to thinke with himselfe how fraile and deceitfull the riches of this world are, which as they do not make him blessed that possessech them, so doe they sone vanish away euen as the floure of the herbe. What doth not Paul say, Let him that reioyceth, reioyce in the Lord? Wherfore the doth James bid him that is pooze & of low degree, reioyce in that he is exalted, and him that is rich, in that he is made low.

The Apostles doe nothing disagree the one with the other. For both of them doe place the foundation of true reioycing in the Lord. Wherfore these exceptions are to be held: first what good thing soeuer we haue, let vs acknowledge that we haue receiued it of God, attributing nothing to our selues. Secondly let vs holde fast this foundation that we trust to be saued through the onely mercy of God. Finally let vs rest in the onely authoz of all goodnesse: with these exceptions we may reioyce and that godly in euery kinde of thing that is good.

11 For as vwhen the sunne riseth vwith heate, then the grasle wythereth, and his floure falleth avway, and the goodly shape of it perisheth: euen so shall the rich man vvither avway in all his vvayes.

He amplifieth the comparision wherein he compareth the glory of riches to the fading floure, which when the heate of the Sunne increaseth, is wythered, falleth away and perisheth. As therefore it is a foolish thing to reioyce in bayne riches: so the godly man should do preposterously, if he being discouraged with the grieuousnesse of his paupertie, should be ouercome of tentation.

12 Blessed is the mā that endureth tentation: for vvhē he is tried, he shall receiue the crowne of life, vvhich the Lord hath promised to them that loue him.

Before



Epistle of S. James.

Before he willed that christians doe reioyce when they shall fall into diuers tentations, now hauing confuted those thinges, that seemed to be agaynst his purpose, hee rendzeth a reason of his exhortation. The argument is concluded after this sort: Blessed is the man that endureth tentation, that is which fainteth not vnder the burden of tentation: therefore the godly oughte with good cause to reioyce, when they fall into diuers tentations. The antecedent he proueth by the ende of tentation being ouercome after this maner: when he that is tempted, is tried, he shall receiue a crowne of life, therefore he may well be called blessed. The antecedent is grounded vpon the promises of God, vvhich crowne, sayth he, God hath promised to them that loue him. This place y Papists abuse to confirme their opinion concerning merites of workes. But the very circumstance of the place confuteth them. For the Apostle dealeth here with them that are conuerted, who being iustified before by fayth, do go thorow diuers tentations to the haueu of blessednesse: Agayne, it is one thing to speake of the cause of saluation, and another thing to speake of the way, by which we must come vnto saluation which is free. Neyther is the crowne of life a rewarde due to our fighte, but a free recompence of our labour. For we doe not deserue a crowne by fighting, but the father giueth it vnto his childzen of his mere goodnesse, who considereth not so much what the childzen doe deserue, as what he hath promised them of his fatherly loue. Furthermoze, if any man object: the crowne of life is promised to them that loue, therfore loue is a merit or desert of the crowne: We must aunswere that there is committed a fallacion of that which is not the caule as of the cause. For the antecedent doth not contayne the cause of the crowne, but the qualitie or maner of crowning. And bicause there be two principles of things, one that the thinges be, the other that they maye be

The reason why the godly ought to reioyce in tentations.

The blessed ende of the tentations of the godly.

The Papistes abuse of this place, and the confutation thereof.

An obiection.

The aunswer.

C.iii.

knowne



cap 2. vers 13

## A Commentarie vpon the

The very principles vvhery vve are iustified and saued.

The meanes vvhery vve are knowne to be righteous & saued.

Matth. 25. 35. 36.

X

God is not the author of tentation, or of sinne.

From vvhence tentation procede th, and the maner howe.

knowne what they be, we must vnderstand  $\text{h}$  concerning God, his mere good will and pleasure, and the redemption which his sonne hath wrought, and sayth concerning our selues are the very principles, which doe iustifie and saue vs. But if thou considerest the knowledge of righteousness and saluation, the principles thereof are rightly sayd to be patience vnder the Crosse, loue, mercy towarde the poore, and other vertues. For these doe make that thou maiest be knowne to be righteous, and saued. Whereupon the Lord sayth: *I was an hungred and ye gaue me meate, I was naked and ye clothed me.* By these fruites of fayth the angels of God and men shall iudge the tree in the last day, and thereby shall account the righteousness and saluation of the elect. But here of moze in the second chapter, where shall be entreated of a liuely and of a dead fayth.

13 Let no man say, vvhhen he is tempted: I am tempted of God: for God can not be tempted vvith euell, neither tempteth he any man.

He being about to entreate of the causes of tentation, first taketh away the error of them which thought God to be the author of tentation, and forbiddeth that any man, when he is tempted (that is, when he is prouoked to doe euill) say that he is tempted of the Lorde. For God wvll not haue sinne, therefore he prouoketh not to sinne, neither is delighted vvith the perdition of men. Wherefore as God himselfe is voyde of tentation: so doth he tempt no man, that is, he doth not moue him forwardes to sinne. Thys place doth plainly make agaynst those that make God the author of sinne.

14 But euery man is tempted vvhhen he is dravne away by his ovvne concupiscence, and is entised.

He sheweth the cause and fountayne of tentation, that is, of prouoking to doe euill. This fountayne or spring he maketh to be euery mans own concupiscence, to the which he attributeth a double effect. For the first, it vvithdraweth the

the



tap. 17 v. 29

# Epistle of S. James.

9

the cogitation of man from that which is good. Secondly, it entileth the affection of man, and ouerwhelmech him vnwares. We must therfoze striue agaynst the first motions, least that being entiled by our concupiscence, we fall into sinne.

## Of tentation, and the remedie agaynst it.

**T**Entation is a driuing forward or perswading of a mā to enterprise some thing, that is, either to commit, or to omit. Hereof there are dyuers sorts, whych take their differences of their endes. For there is one tentation of seducing or beguyling, there is another of presumption, another of triall. Of these thre I wyll speake in order, and shewe the remedyes agaynst euery of them. Tentation of seducing, is that, the ende whereof is seducing or beguiling. By this man is prouoked to enterpryse something agaynst the law of God, whereby he being deceiued, is miserably excluded out of the familie of God, falleth from grace, and becommeth guiltye of eternall death, vn-tyll such tyme as he repent. For sayth can not abide and and remaine, when man giueth place to such tentation, and knowing and willing doth disobediently despise the commaundement of God. This tentation of seducing is of two sortes if thou considerest the causes thereof. For it is eyther outward or inwarde. I call that inwarde, whose beginning and cause is in man himselfe, to wit, euel concupiscence: which fighteth together with a domesticall tyranne, that is originall sinne: and driueth a man to offend, that by this meanes the olde man, that is, originall sinne may obtaine the rule in man. But concupiscence in euery man is of two sortes, one naturall, an other of the flesh. Naturall concupiscence is that, by which we do naturally desire those thinges, which by the right iudgement of reason we iudge eyther honest, eyther profitable, eyther pleasant. This by it selfe is the worke of God in man, and

What tentation is.

Three Kindes of tentation.

Tentation of seducing what it is.

Two Kindes of tentation of seducing.

Inward tentation of seducing.

Naturall concupiscence what it is and how farre to be approued.

D. i.

by

cerning  
redempti-  
cerning  
ustice and  
of righte-  
are rightly  
ry towarde  
sa that thou  
Wherupon  
me meate, I  
s of sayth the  
the last day,  
and saluation  
apier, where  
ely.  
I am temp-  
red with e-  
  
of tentation,  
ought God to  
hat any man,  
ouoked to doe  
For God wyll  
sinne, neither  
rfoye as God  
empe no man,  
sinne. Thys  
make God the  
  
is dravne a-  
id is entiled.  
ntation, that  
e of syng he  
to the which  
wi. h. p. a. w. e. t. h.  
the



A Commentarie vpon the

by no meanes to be condemned, as long as it keepeth it selfe within it owne boundes, that is, whiles it desireth those thinges that are shewed by the right iudgement of reason, to wit, those thinges whiche are in very deede honest, profitable and pleasant, by which nature is not defiled but preserved. Concupiscence of the flesh is, when by the corruption of the flesh we desire those thinges, whiche please the flesh and displease God, as when we couet after any thing, which is forbidden vs by the law of God. This of Plato is worthely called a beast with many heads, of which it is spoken pouverbially, Concupiscence is the first beginning of all euells. For it is a most fruitefull mother of pernicious children: to this Marcus the Heremite did attribute selfe loue. Of this do spring surfetting and drunkennesse, couetousnesse, thirst after bayne glozpe. Of this surfetting come vnlawfull lustes and all kindes of pernicious pleasures. Of couetousnesse cometh fraud, guile, iniurye, lying, violence, manslaughter. Of thirst after bayne glozpe springeth pride, wicked ambition, diuers ill practises, briesly contempt of God and of our neighbour. Thou seest what a fruitefull mother of all vices the concupiscence of the flesh is, which one hath called, and not vnworthely, the fountayne of all euell, in asmuch as it is not onely the euident cause of all iniquitie and hatred of God, but also it calleth men from that which is good and honest. For when men doe study vpon heauenly thinges, and meditate vpon diuine matters, this cometh, and with entisements as with certayne cordes draweth them backe. Wherefoze James doth not without good cause affirme, that men are entised by their owne concupiscence. But how shal we ouercome the concupiscence of the flesh? This beast is to be bounde with singular art and cunning, and to be mortified: but it is bound, not by mans strength, but by a diuine power, that is, by the spirite of sayth, which in the man that is regenerate doth ingender

a cer-

X

Concupiscence of the flesh, and the description thereof.

X

The plentiful frutes of fleshly concupiscence.

X

Fleshly concupiscence the roote of all mischief.

X

By what meanes concupiscence of the flesh may be ouercome.



cap 2 207 19

Epistle of S. James. 10

a certayne newe concupiscence, which is called the concupiscence of the spirite. This, when it is first conceived by the spirite of sayth, setteth it selfe agaynst the concupiscence of the flesh, whereupon there riseth in all the godly a very sore conflict betweene the flesh and the spirite. Hereupon is that which Paule sayth: *The flesh lusteth agaynst the spirite, and the spirite agaynst the flesh.* But from whence is that concupiscence of the spirite? It proceedeth from the vertue of the death, buriall, and resurrection of the Lord, which in time past was represented in the olde sacrifices which were first bound and then kylled, but all the whole vertue is in the Crosse of Christ. Therefore to bynde the concupiscence of the flesh, is to fasten it to the crosse of Christ, that in it it may be mortified, that it be not effectuell to worke. Wherefore this beast is then bound, when thou doest not those thinges which it commaundeth, it is wholly mortified, when the force thereof is not felt, which commeth not to passe before we haue changed this lyfe with death, which is a passage to the true lyfe. To the bynding and mortifying of this beast, all the exercises of godlinesse must be referred, as prayer, reading meditation, sobrietie, diligence in our dutye, flying of euell occasions, thinking on the prouidence of God, consideration of the euell of concupiscence, the glozyous end of victozye, the shame and dishonestye that accompanieth them, whiche submytte them selues to this beast. Thus much bryefly concerning the inward tentation of seducing or beguiling, and of the remedy agaynst it. The outwarde tentation of beguyling, is whole beginning and cause is without a man, and this may be distinguished according to the diuersitye of the causes. Wherefore, seeing that sometime the worlde, sometime the deuell, sometime the thinges that are about vs are the causes thereof, it commeth to passe that there be three differences of this outward tentation. The worlde therefore tempteth when it prouoketh to

The flesh in the godly fighteth agaynst the spirite. Gal. 5. 17.

Concupiscence of the spirite from whence it commeth.

Meanes to bynde and mortifie fleshly concupiscence.



The outward tentation of seducing, which is of three sortes according to the causes thereof, which are the world, the deuell, the things that are about vs.

When and howe the worlde tempteth vs.

D.ii.

sinne

speth it  
desireth  
ment of  
deede ha  
s not desi  
when by  
s, whiche  
rouet after  
God. This  
p heads, of  
is the first  
ill mocher  
remite did  
and dym  
pe. O this  
is of perni  
ad, guile,  
thirst after  
n, diuers ill  
neighbour  
res the con  
ed, and not  
ch as it is  
d hatred of  
good and  
by thinges,  
meth, and  
tweh them  
good cause  
supiscence,  
the flesh?  
and cum  
by mans  
spirite of  
ingender  
a cece



cap i vers 14

## A Commentarie vpon the

sinne by it vanitie and wickednesse. Many are ouercome by this kind of tentation. For when they beholde the most corrupt maners of men, and see them also unpunished, many are allured by this example. Whereupon it is sayde that an euill custome is the nourishing of euil. Agaynst this kinde of tentation we must sette the glozy of the kingdome of Christ, wherewith the vanitie of the worlde being compared is as a smoke sone vanishing away. Secondly let vs think vpon the shortnes of mans life, which although it maye be filled with the vanitie of the worlde, yet those continuall delightes in the kingdome of God are by infinite degrees to be preferred before it. Also let vs consider how Christ the Lord, and many of the sayntes of God despised the vanitie and wickednes of the worlde, looking vnto the price that is set before them that runne lawfully.

Remedies agaynst the tentation of the world.

To what ende the deuell tempteth vs.

The engines of the deuell which he vseth in tempting the godly.

Examples of such as were led with the tentations of the deuell.

The deuill tempteth men after diuers sortes, and that vnto this ende, that he may hinder them from being gathered together into the folde of Christ, or that, when they are gathered together, he may cast them out agayne, that they should not be saued. For there is nothing moze pleasant vnto him than the destruction of all men. And for this cause he vseth especially thre engines to inuade the folde of Christ. For eyther he corrupteth the doctrine, or raiseth vp offences, or else giueth occasions of infinite mischiefes, that I may in the meane season say nothing of his hypocrisie, tyrannie, and craftinesse, which he continually vseth to assaile the Church of Christ. He entreteth into the heart of man, and with speede taketh out the worde of God from thence, that a secure contempt of God maye follow, as in Rabshakeh: or hatred and wyath agaynst God, as in Saul: or a furious defending of a wicked opinion, as in the Papistes. Such were the tentations of Cain, Saul, Judas, Samosatenus, Arius, and in our time of Seruetus, and of very manye other, and at thys  
time



Epistle of S. James.

cap 10472

time Satan doth rage much more, than euer he did at any other. For he knoweth that the end of his furie is at hand, and that the sonne of God will shortly come, who shall iudge him with all his members to euerlasting torments. What remedie is here? the aduersarie is mightie, the companie of his warrours is great, we haue neede therefore of a most strong defence. What I pray you is that? This is the victorie, sayeth Iohn, that ouercommeth the worlde, euen our fayth. And Salomon sayth: the name of the Lorde is a strong tower, the righteous runneth vnto it, and is in safegarde. For seeing there is no other waye to ouercome this tentation of the deuell, then a liuely fayth in Christ the conquerour of Satan, y this liuely fayth may be kindled with earnest prayer, let vs with exceeding care and studie kepe y puritie of doctrine, wheron fayth dependeth. Also agaynst offences and other practises of Satan, let vs fortifie and strengthen our selues with the examples of the Saintes, and encourage our selues with the hope of our deliuerance, which shall be through Iesus Christ, whom we looke for to come shortly to iudge the quick and the deade. Doze defences agaynst the assaultes of Satan, Paule numbzeth by Eph. 6. which ought from thence to be taken.

Why Satan  
rageth more  
now then  
heretofore.

1. Iohn. 5. 4.  
Pro. 18. 10.

How the ten-  
tations of Sa-  
tan maye be  
resisted and  
ouercome.

The things that are about vs, doe about measure also tempt vs. Before vs death, the iudgement of God, hell. Behinde vs our sinnes that are past, many things committed and omitted. On our right hande, power, riches, honour. On our left hand perils, persecutions, offences, the most sorrowfull state of the Church of God outwardly in this worlde. These euels Iesus Christ onely doth remedy, whiles he is possessed by fayth. For if thou beholdest those thinges that are before vs, he hath ouercome death with life, he hath satisfied the iudgement of God, paying the ransome for our sinnes, he hath spoyled hell. If thou lookest vnto those thinges that are behinde vs,

Tentation  
that commeth  
of the thinges  
that are about  
vs.

Remedies  
prescribed.

D.iii.

it

ercome  
the most  
ued, ma-  
is saye  
Agaynst  
the king-  
nd being  
Secondly  
which al-  
he worde,  
of God are  
Also let vs  
layntes of  
worlde, loo-  
rume late-  
  
and that  
being ca-  
when they  
payne, that  
more plea-  
nd for this  
e the folde  
or raiseh  
mitchetes,  
his hypo-  
timally v-  
th into the  
worde of  
God maye  
h agaynst  
icked opi-  
ations of  
nd in our  
d at thys  
time



A Commentarie vpon the

it is he onely, which maketh a full satisfaction for finnes. If thou settest the treasures of all good things in him, the power, riches, and honour of the worlde shall not easilie drawe thee from Christ, neither shalt thou giue ouer being discouraged with any euils, so as thou possessest him by a liuely fayth, and desirest his helpe agaynst all things that doe annoy or hurt thee.

The seconde kinde of tentation which is of presumption.

Remedies against the tentation of presumption.

Tentation of presumption is, when a man is prouoked to tempt God by abusing his long sufferance, iustice, mercie, liberalitie, and many other benefites. This tentation truly is dangerous, for if any man be ouercome of it, he sinneth more freely and boldly, bicause he determineth with himselfe that God is good and mercifull, and slowe to anger, as the psalme sayth. This tentation these things doe chiefly remedie: first, a thinking on the shortnesse of lyfe: secondly, a consideration of tragicall and lamentable examles. For many sinning securely, haue bene suddenly preuented by the wrath of God, and taken from hence without repentance: thirdly, the very vnworthynesse it selfe. For what is a more vnworthie thing, than for the chylde to despise the father, bicause he is good to him and mercifull towarde him. Let euery one therefore walke carefully in the sight of the Lorde, and knowe that it is a deuellishe furte and madnesse, to sinne aduisedlye and of a sette purpose, or to deferre repentance, bicause God is sayde to be long suffering, gentle, and mercifull. For he is sayde also to be a iust Iudge, which is angrye with finnes, and is determined seuerelye to punish the vrepentant.

The thirde kinde of tentation, which is of triall.

Abraham tried with tentation.

Tentation of triall is, whereby the fayth of man toward God is tried, to wit, eyther when any worke is committed to a man heauie and grieuous to the flesh, or any affliction commeth to him from God for his trials sake, or when any heresie agaynst the articles of our fayth is suffered to arise, Abraham receiueth a commaundement from God,



top 1 ver 15

Epistle of S. James. 12

God, wherein he is commaunded to kill for a burnt offering his sonne Isaac, his onely heire, which Sara a free and noble matron brought forth vnto him. This commaundement without all doubt was heauie and grieuous to the flesh: but what doth Abraham here? He preferreth obedience toward God before this his most tender sonne, then whom nothing was more precious vnto him in this world, and prepareth himselfe to execute the commaundement of God, Genes. 22. Job is oppressed with affliction in his body, and with many other nuseries, but in patience he preferreth obedience toward God before his owne life and all other things whatsoever. I am sure, sayth he, that my redeemer liueth, & that I shall rise out of the earth in the latter day. Also, shall we receiue good at the hands of God, and not receiue euel? The primitive Church was tempted with many and diuers heresies, as we are at this day, but as they did, so let vs set the fountaine of our sauiour agaynst all the cesters of Heretikes full of deuillish stinck and filthines. Of this kinde of tentation Moses speaketh, Deut. 13. The Lorde your God proueth you, to knowe whether ye loue the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soule. Agaynst this kind of tentation let vs strengthen our selues with two thinges: with holding fast the puritie of the Gospell, and with constant obedience toward God both in prosperitie and also in aduersitie,

15. Then vwhen lust hath conceiued, it bringeth forth sinne, and sinne vwhen it is finished bringeth forth death.

In the former verse the Apostle compareth concupiscence to a bayt, wherewith the fisher couereth his hooke, that he may deceiue and catch the fishes: here he compareth the same to a woman that bringeth forth children, that he may thereby signifie that it is the mother and fountayne of all sinnes, yea and of all euel. Concupiscence is then sayd to

D.iiii.

haue

not nulli  
sone digna  
dignosados

all right

Job tried  
with tentati-  
on.

Job. 19. 25.

Job. 2. 10.

The primitive  
Church tried  
with tentati-  
on.

How we must  
behaue our  
selues in ten-  
tation of  
triall.

sinnes,  
him, the  
re easilye  
ouer be-  
lieffed him  
all thins

provoked  
iustice, mer-  
is tentation  
me of it, he  
etermineth  
, and slowe  
these thinge  
e thymesse  
nd lamenta-  
me bene so-  
taken from  
two, thynes  
than for the  
to him and  
efore walke  
that it is a  
dye and of  
the G D D  
refull. For  
mgye with  
the bare

nan toward  
is committe  
of any as-  
is sake, or  
pyth is suf-  
ment from  
God,



cap. 17. 17. 18

## A Commentarie vpon the

When concupiscence conceyeth.

haue conceiued, when it possesseth the affection and will, which when it is done, forthwith it bringeth forth actuall sinne, whereof as it were a certayne issue commeth death and damnation. Here therefore is mention made of two kindes of sinne, to wit, originall and actuall. Originall

Originall sin.

sinne is signified by the name of concupiscence, the proper and next effect thereof. This, although by it selfe and of it owne nature it is a mortall sinne, yet in the regenerate it is pardoned, so that it bringeth not death, except first it begin to reigne through the euel desires thereof. Whereupon Paule Rom. 6. sayth: *Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lusts ther-*

Actual sinne.

*of.* Actual sinne is, when we doe voluntarily submit our selues to concupiscence to obey it, and suffer it to haue the whole rule in vs.

16 Erre not my deare brethren.

We must in no wise think that God tempteth any man to doe euill.

Because that many had perswaded themselves, that men are tempted of God to doe that which is euel: he doth a gayne admonish and exhort them, that they suffer not themselves to be entangled with this errour, signifying that many absurd thinges and unworthy of God doe follow this opinion. But that they may more attentiuely and gently here the most strong reason thereof, he doth as it were prepare them, by calling them by the name of brethren, and by a signification of his loue, wherewith he embraceth them. For we doe more willingly heare them, whose goodwill we perceiue toward vs, when as contrariwise we feare the deceites of them, whose minds we vnderstand to be estranged from vs.

17 Euerie good giuing and euery perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth dovvne from the Father of lights, vvith vvhome is no variableness, neyther shadowv of turning.

18 Of his ovvne vvill begat he vvith the vvord of truth, that vve should be as the first fruites of his creatures.



creatures.

This is a most strong reason, wherein the Apostle doth confute the errour of them, which did contend that God doth tempt men to doe euell, yea and that he is the authoz of sinne. But that the partes of this reason may be the better perceiued, and the benefits of God toward vs may be moze manifestly acknowledged, I will make a resolution of the wordes, and will diuide them into six partes, in euery of which I will bring in the proposition of the Apostle, that it may be vnderstand of what great force this reason is to confute the errour of the aduersaries. First therefore he saith: Every good giuing and euery perfect gift, (that is, nothing at all counterfeit) is frō aboue. By which saying he signifieth that solliciting or mouing to doe euell is in no wise from aboue, for how should it agree that good thinges and euell shoulde flowe out of the same fountayne? But if any man doe except that the euell of punishment is from aboue, let him againe knowe, that the cause, that is, the euell of offence is in man, which God being iust doth iustly punish. Wherefore if thou considerest the iustice of God, the punishment is not to be called euell but good.

Six reasons follow in order, which do most firmly prooue that God doth in no case tempt any to doe euell.

The first reason.

Secondly he sayth: Comming dovn from the Father of lightes. As Father here signifieth the authoz and fountayne: so by the word lightes is ment all good thinges, euen as by the word darkenesse calamities of euerye soyte are to be vnderstand. Whereof is made this reason: God is the father of lightes, that is, the authoz of all good thinges, therefore he is not the authoz of darknesse, that temptation to euell should be attributed to him. Let this testification of the prayse of God be marked, which belongeth onely vnto him, to wit, that he is the fountayne and authoz of all good thinges, which ought to admonish vs of prayer wherein we maye aske those thinges which are

The second reason.

E. i.

good

and will,  
th actmall  
neth death  
ade of two  
Originall  
the proper  
lie and of it  
egenerate it  
except first it  
of. Where  
ne therefore  
e lasts i ber  
submit our  
a to haue the  
  
es, that men  
he doth a  
ey suffer not  
r, signifying  
f God doe fal  
attentimelye  
reof, he doth  
the name of  
wherewith he  
heare them,  
en as contra  
minds we in  
  
gift is from  
the Father of  
es, neyther  
  
he vword of  
uites of his  
creatures,



cap i vers 18

### A Commentarie vpon the

good of him who is the fountayne of all goodnes. We ought hereby also to be admonished of thankfulness, that we may shewe our selues thankfull towards him. Thirdly he addeth: vwith vvhom is no variableness. These wordes seeme to be a preuenting of an obiection. For least anye man should saye that he is the authour both of good thinges and of euell, he letteth against that his constancie, whereby he is immutable in his doings. Seing therfore variableness hath not place with God, and that he is manifestly proued to be the authour of all goodnes, who can without blasphemie attribute vnto him those thinges that be euell? Fourthly he addeth: or shadowv of turning. These wordes also seeme to be a preuenting of an obiection. We see that the turning and chaunge of the heauenly lightes is diuers and manifold. For the sunne sometime shineth bright & cleare, sometime agayne it being as it were darkened is hidden from vs. Least that anye attribute vnto God anye such shadowe, he proueth, that he is free from all shadowe of turning. Wherevpon it maye be gathered seeing he is alwaye like himselfe, that nothing but that which is good doth proceede from him. Fifthly he sayth: of his ovvne good vvill begate he vs vwith the vvorde of truth. This he addeth for examples sake. For God when we were by our first natiuitie the children of wrath and damnation, of his mere fatherly goodwill made vs his children by the word of truth, that is, by the Gospell. For he which beleueth the Gospell, is made the soune of God by the spirite of Christ. Seing therfore God doth vouchsafe vs so great honour, who beleueth that he doth prouoke any man to doe euell? Sixthly is added an argument of the ende of our regeneration when he sayth: that vve should be as the first frutes of his creatures, that is, that we should be holy. Inasmuch therfore as he hath begat vs that we should be holy, it is an absurd thing to thinke that he maketh vs defiled by prouoking

The thirde reason.

The fourth reason.

The fift reason.

The sixt reason.



cap i of 19 p 20  
Epistle of S. James.

14

prouoking vs to doe euell. When as he calleth the saines the first frutes, he alludeth vnto the custome of the lawe, wherby the first frutes were consecrated vnto God, wherbypon we are admonished continually to meditate on true holines. Here also he putteth a difference betweene the Church and the rest of the world. For as the Church is holy and dedicated to God: so the rest of the world wrapped in it filchines is prophane and wicked. Furthermore, bypon this doctrine of regeneration the Apostle maketh these exhortations following:

The Church and the world differ much.

19 VVherefore my deare brethren, let euery man be swift to heare, slowe to speake, and slowe to vvrath.

By the example of Christ, Paule, Peter, yea, and of all the Prophetes and Apostles, he, by the vertue of regeneration maketh a necessitie of liuing godly and holily, for godlynesse and holynesse is the proper effect of regeneration. And bicause God requireth a certayne circumcision of the eares and of the lips, James bygeth the same, and will haue him that is regenerate, swift to heare and learn those things which are good and healthfull, but slowe to speake. By which saying, he will haue first that the tounge doe not runne befoze the witte. Secondly, that we doe flie trifling, bayne, and rayling speeches. Thirdblye, that we speake only things necessarie, whiche tende to edifying and honestie. Herewith very well agreeth the saying: Either speake that which is better than silence, or else altogether keepe silence.

The circumcision of the eares and lips wherein it consisteth.

20 For the vvrath of man doth not accomplishe the righteousnes of God.

What kinde of vvrath is here forbidden, is to be gathered both by the reason which is vnder annexed, and also by the conclusion, yea, by the whole circumstance of this place. The vvrath of man, sayth he, doth not accomplish the righteousnes of God, that is, it doth not execute that,

E.ii,

which



cap 1 ver 21 22

A Commentarie vpon the

What kinde  
of wrath the  
Apostle for-  
biddeth.

which God speaketh and prescribeth, nay it maketh that thou doest in vaine heare God speaking. Wherefore wrath in this place is taken for that wrath, which proceedeth of a desire to contende, whereby the audience is hindred. The Apostle therefore wil haue one to heare another, their affections being appeased and quieted. For where tumults and contentions haue place, the righteousnesse of God is banished, that is, those thinges are nothing accounted of, which God prescribeth to vs, and requireth of vs.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filchinesse and superfluitie of malitiousnes, and receyue vvith meekenesse the vvord that is graffed in you, vvhich is able to saue your soules.

A description  
of the true  
hearers of the  
word of God.

This is the conclusion of the exhortation, in which he exhorteth vs that we be swift to heare without wrath. This place doth verie well teach what hearers the worde of God requireth. First, filchinesse and superfluitie of malitiousnesse ought to be away, that is, the affections of the fleshe and reason ought to giue place to the word of God, that they stirre not by contentions, whereupon wrath ariseth. Secondly, meekenesse ought to be present, which succedeth in y place of wrath. Meekenesse here is as much as modestie or aptnes to learne. Thirdly, the mind being thus ordered & prepared, the word which is graffed in vs is to be receiued, that is, y word is to be receiued by faith which is graffed & implanted in vs by the labour and trauell of the Ministers. Fourthly, y effect of the word receyued is added, y by it as by a picke we should be stirred by to heare more diligently: vvhich, sayth he, is able to saue your soules, and that because sayth is conceived by hearing the worde of God, whereby man being iustified, is enforced to giue himselfe to newnesse of lyfe, whereupon it followeth:

The effect of  
the worde of  
God faithfully  
receyued.

22 And be ye doers of the vvord and not hearers only, deceyuing your ovne selues.

What



Epistle of S. James. 15

What kynde of hearer the Apostle requireth, he declareth in these wordes. He will haue that we be not only hearers of the word, as the greatest part of men is, but doers also, that is, such, as in whom the word being engrafted, doth take roote, which commeth to passe when fayth is conceyued by the worde, and our obedience doth witnesse our fayth. This Christ calleth to keepe the worde, when he sayth: *Blessed are they that heare the worde of God, and keepe it.* Moreover, we must note, that one is sayde to be a doer of the worde, after two sortes, to wit, according to the rule of the lawe, and according to the grace of the Gospell. According to the rule of the lawe he is sayde to be a doer of the worde, which doth perfectlye fulfill the lawe, which Paule Rom. 1. 2. 3. sheweth by foure most euident reasons, that no man liuing is able to performe. He is sayde to be a doer of the worde according to grace, who by true godlynesse doth witnesse his fayth conceyued by the worde, and doth all his lyfe long as much as maye be in this corrupt nature, meditate vpon true repentance. Although he falleth sometime eyther knowing or through ignorance, he doth by and by through true repentance returne to the Lorde, as infinite examples of the Saints do witnesse. Why he will haue men doers of the worde, and not hearers onely, he sheweth when he addeth: deceiuing your selues, that is, beguyling your selues through deceptfull imaginations, or through your owne subtiltie, as not only hypocrates doe, which put trust and confidence in outwarde woorkes without true repentance: but also many, who vnder the name of Christians beare a Turkishe minde. These alway haue fayth in their mouthes, they alway glorie of the benefites of the mediator although they neuer thinke vpon true repentance.

23 For if any heare the vword and doe it not, he is like vnto a man that beholdeth his naturall face in a glasse.

E.iii.

24 For

What it is not only to heare the word, but also to doe it.

Luk. 11. 28.

Two sortes of doers of the word.

A doer of the word according to the lawe.

A doer of the word according to grace.

The reason why we must be not only hearers, but also doers of the word.

th that  
wath  
deh of  
ed. The  
ir affe.  
ales and  
is ha  
med of,  
uperliu-  
ekenesse  
s able to  
ch he ex-  
th. This  
worde of  
e of mali-  
ms of the  
of God,  
n wath a-  
mt, which  
s as much  
and being  
ffed in vs  
d by faith  
e and tra-  
oyd recey-  
stirred by  
le to saue  
d by hea-  
stified, is  
here vpon  
ers on-



Comp 1 - ver 29 25

*A Commentarie vpon the*

24 For vwhen he hath considered himselfe, he goeth his vvay, and forgetteth immediatly vvhat maner of one he vvvas.

Why wee must not bee hearers onely he proueth by a worthie similitude.

The workes of hypocrites fitly compared to an image appearing in a glasse

By a very excellent similitude he rendzeth a reason why he will not haue a hearer of the word onely. The which similitude is thus much in effect: Euen as he that beholdeth his image or shape in a glasse, doth retayne in his minde a knowledge which soone passeth away, and a weake memory of his forme, and therefore such a contemplation profiteth nothing: so a hearer of the word onely retayneth no firme and sure knowledge. For forthwith after he hath heard it, it vanissheth away, and therefore such knowledge is vnprofitable, and nothing auayleth the hearer. Hypocrisie is verie properly and fitly compared to an image appearing in a glasse. For as in a glasse although there appeare a certaine similitude, yet it is false, inas-much as those thinges are represented in the glasse on the left hand, which are in deede on the right, and those that are on the right hand, are shewed to be on the left, and by this meanes there is a counterfayting of the truth: so in the workes of hypocrites although there be a fayze shewe outwardly in the sight of men, yet it is false, for that those thinges which are vngodly and wicked are counted holy and true. If any man demaund how it commeth to passe that there is such a slender knowledge and so weake a memory by the beholding of the glasse, let him know that the maner of doing according to the philosophers doth follow the maner of being. For, because y image or shape in a glasse doth but only seeme to be, & is not in deede, it commeth to passe y it maketh so weake & slender an impressi-on in y mind, as we see to be done in certain dreames also.

25 But vvho so looketh in the perfect law of libertie, and continueth therein, he not being a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the vvorke, shall be blessed in his deede.

He



cap 2 vers 26 27

Epistle of S. James. 16

He declareth who is to be counted a doer of the word, and that, as I admonished before according to grace, and not according to the rigour of the law. He calleth the law perfect, bicause it prescribeth a perfect rule to liue by: he calleth it of libertie, bicause that how much moze a man is giuen and addicted to it, so that he beleue in Christ, so much the moze he declareth himselfe to be free. For to serue God is to reigne. He that looketh in this law, to the intent he may thoroughly knowe it and expresse it in his life, he, sayth the Apostle, is not a forgetfull hearer of the word, but a doer of it, who also shal be blessed in his deede. For sayth is knowne by the effects as a tree by the fruits, which sayth onely doth apprehend Christ, who alone of God is made vnto vs wisdome, and righteousnesse, and sanctification, and redemption, that he that reioyceth should reioyce in the Lord. James therefore speaketh here of the qualitie of them that are iustified, and of the rewardes of their obedience, and not of the causes of their iustifying. Bernard sayth: Good workes are not the causes of reigning, but the way to the kingdome.

VWhy the law is called perfect.

VWherefore he calleth it a law of libertie

VWho is not a forgetfull hearer.

1. Cor. 1. 30.

26 If any man among you seemeth religious and refraineth not his tongue, but deceiueth his ovne heart, this mans religion is vayne.

He reprehendeth hypocrites which did boast that they did religiously obserue the lawe, and yet in the meane time were giuen to backbiting and sclaudering, which vice is common among all hypocrites, as the historpe of the Gospell doth shewe in the Pharise, who glozied of his religion, and in the meane season accused other men with his sclauderous tongue. From whence this vice proceedeth he sheweth when he addeth: but deceiueth his ovn heart, that is, is a louer of him selfe. For he iudgeth that he is godly and religious, but his religion is in bayne, as is proued by the reason following:

An vsuall vice among hypocrites.

27 Pure religion and vndefiled before God euen the

E.iiii,

father,

goeth  
maner  
son why  
he which  
at behol-  
me in his  
y, and a  
a contem-  
and onely  
thy with af-  
efore such  
h the hea-  
ared to an  
although  
ille, inas-  
ille on the  
thole that  
fit, and by  
ruth: so in  
ype the we  
that those  
med holy  
y to passe  
ake a me-  
now that  
a doth fol-  
a shape in  
e, it com-  
impressi-  
mes also,  
libertie,  
gefull  
blessed  
De



cap 7 ver 27

## A Commentarie vpon the

father, is this, to visit the fatherles and vviddowes in their aduersitie, and to keepe himsele vnspotted of the vworld.

Certayne properties of them that are truly religious

He proueth by certayne properties of religion that hypocrites which are giuen to sclaundering and euell speaking are not truly religious: he concludeth his argument after this sort: They that are truly religious doe keepe themselves vnspotted of the world, and do shew mercy to the afflicted. Hypocrites which will seeme to be religious, doe not keepe themselves vnspotted of the world, neither shew mercy to the afflicted. Wherefore they are not religious, but rather vaine boasters of religion. It was not the purpose of James perfectly to define religion, but onely to set downe certayne properties thereof disagreeing with the vanitie of hypocrites. Wherefore they are not to be heard, which here sharply reprove and find fault with James as a man ignorant of true religion. For it is one thing to define a thing and an other to signifie or shew it by certayne signes and tokens. Which, it is an vnseemely thing and a shame, for the sharpe reprovours and taunters of James not to know. But this is a full and perfect definition of Christian religion: Christian religion is a liuely fayth in Iesus Christ, and a confession thereof, wherto is ioyned a pure study of worshipping God, and sincere charity towards men together with a hope of immortality promised. The substantiall partes therefore of Christian religion by nature ioyned together, are fayth, the worship of God, charitie towards our neighbour, and hope of saluation promised by Christ.

A full and perfect definition of christian religion.

The



cap 2 b 7

Epistle of S. James.

17

Chap. 2.

The summe of the second Chapter.

As he doth debort those that are converted from despising and disdainyng the poore, and from accepting of persons: so he doth condemne a vayne boasting of fayth, which is voyde and destitute of it right and true frutes.

The order and partes of the second Chapter.

There are two partes of this Chapter, the fyrst whereof contayneth a deborting or diswading. For he doth therein debort Christians from accepting of persons. This parte consisteth of a propositio and a confirmation. The latter part contayneth a teaching or instructing. For therein he teacheth that that fayth is vayne which wanteth works. This part also consisteth of a propositio and a confirmation.

The exposition of the second Chapter with an obseruation of the Doctrine.

My brethren, haue not the fayth of our Lord Iesus Christ the Lorde of glory in respecte of persones.



This is the first propositio of this Chapter contayning a certayne hiddon reason which is thus to be resolued and made manifest: Brethren doe not accept persons. This is the bare propositio. The reason of the propositio is this, for that the fayth of our Lord Iesus Christ and the accepting of persons doe so disagree, that they cannot stand together.

To haue respect of persones is not agreeable to the christian fayth.

Why so? Bicause the glory of Christ requireth, that we

F. i. reue

ldores spotted  
that hypocr  
l speaking  
ment after  
cepe them  
to the af  
igious, doe  
eicher they  
religious,  
not the pur  
out onely to  
eing with  
re not to be  
ile with Ja  
oy it is one  
e of shew it  
vulernely  
and taunters  
perfect deli  
on is a line  
of, wherto  
and sincere  
natorality  
of Christian  
ayth, the  
right

The



cap 2

## A Commentarie vpon the

reuerence all those, in whom Christ dwelleth. So the word of glory, was not added in vayne. It is an hebrue kind of speach, wherby the Genitiue cases of nounes appellatiues are put oftentimes in the place of Epithites. What doth not the Psalm place him among the dwellers in y tabernacle of y Lord, that is, among the heires of eternall life, which contemnech a vile person, and honoureth them that feare the Lorde? Whether is this accepting of persons or no? Accepting of persons is properly, when as the true cause, by the which wee ought to pronounce of the person, being neglected, we doe consider in the persons some other thing without the cause, for which epyer we pronounce false sentence agaynst the person, or otherwise doe accept and fauour the person. Wherefore, this precept of the Apostle doth not subuert and ouerthrowe the order of God established in the \* fourth commaundement concerning the honoz of superiours. But if any mā should despise a poore man that is godly, and preferre a rich man that is wicked, he, leauing the true cause shoulde iudge amisse, as James sheweth when he sayth:

An obiection.

Psal. 15. 4.

The answer.

The fist according to the diuision receiued among vs, for all do not diuide the commaundements alike, which notwithstanding is a thing indifferent: he foloweth here the custome of their Churches.

- 2 For if there come into your company a man vwith a gold ring, and in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poore man in vile rayment,
- 3 And ye haue respect to him that vveareth the gaye clothing, and say vnto him, sit thou here in a goodly place, and say vnto the poore, stande thou there, or sit here vnder my foote stoole:
- 4 Are ye not partiall in your selues, and are become iudges of euill thoughtes?

What maner of accepting of persons the Apostle disalloweth.

By this example he declareth what maner of accepting of persons he condemneth, to wit, that, which followeth a false iudgement for a true in iudging men. For he which doth that, is not onely condemned by the iudgement of his owne conscience, but also his iudgement is peruerse and naughtie, which taketh riches for a rule of difference.

He



cap: 2 b 50  
Epistle of S. James.

18

He doth not therfore simply forbid to honoz the rich, but he speaketh by the way of comparifon, and condemneth him which honoureth wicked rich men with the contempt of godly poore men. Wherefore that accepting of persons is here condemned, which followeth a false difference for a true, which keepeth not a right maner, which erreth from the right ende. If any man therfore preferreth a rich man befoze a poore, bicaufe he is rich, his iudgement is peruerse and corrupt. Agayne, if thou doest so preferre a rich man befoze a poore, that thou handle the poore man reprochfully, there is sinne in the maner thereof. Finally, if thou preferre a rich man befoze a poore to winne fauoz thereby, thou hast erred from the right ende. For what thing is moze vnworthie than to despise the poore man which is godly and learned, and honourably to receyue and entertayne the rich man which is vngodly and vnlearned? He which maketh such a difference with himselfe betweene the poore man and the riche, is become a iudge of euill thoughtes, that is, is not rightly affected, but iudgeth peruerfly agaynst the rule of godlynesse and charitie.

5 Harken my beloued brethren, hath not God chosen the poore of this vvorlde that they shoulde be rich in fayth, and heires of the kingdome vvhich he promised to them that loue him?

He doth in a thort entrance or peface stirre by the hearers to be attentiuē to the argument which he afterwarde annexeth. God hath chosen the poore of this worlde, which are rich in fayth, that they shoulde be heires of the kingdome, which he hath promised to them that loue him. Therefore the poore of this worlde are not to be contemned. In this argument note the order of our restoring againe. In the first place is set election, which is noe where els to be sought but in Christ, *Ephes. 1.* In the second is set fayth, whereby generall election is applyed to the hearers

F. ii.

fers

Why the poore of this vvorlde are not to be despised.

The order of the restoring agayne of mankinde.



cap 2 1/2

# A Commentarie vpon the

riers of the Gospel. For God hath chosen on this condition if men be engrafted by fayth in his sonne without whom is no election but mere reprobation. In the third is put inheritance, whereby is signified adoption, by which the beleuers receiue prerogatiue to be the sonnes of God. In the fourth is added loue, for that is the true fruite of fayth, and an affection proper to the sonnes of God. It is no maruayle therefore if God hath promised a kingdome to them that loue him. For they by fayth haue obtayned power to be the sonnes of God, yea and to be called heires of the heauenly kingdome. For it is manifest out of Paule that loue is not the cause of reigning when he sayth: *The gift of God is eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.*

Rom. 6. 23.

## Of Election.

**T**his place doth admonish that I speake something concerning election. For I see not a fewe to erre from the true cause thereof. Paule sayth. *I. Cor. 1. 26. Brethren you see your calling, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called, but God hath chosen the foolish thinges of the world. &c.* And here James saith: *God hath chosen the poore of this vworld.* Hereupon some do not rightly gather, y wise, mighty, noble and rich men are reprobates, & on the contrary, the ignorant, weake, vnnoble and poore are chosen. For if wisdom, power, noblenes and riches, which all are the giftes of God, were the cause of reprobation, and contrariwise, foolishnes weakenes, vnnoblenesse and pouertie were the cause of election, it should follow that all rich men are reprobates, and all poore men chosen, but both is false. For not a few rich and noble men are godly, chosen, and saued, and many poore men are vngodly, reprobates, and condemned. Why therfore doth Paule say: *Not many wise men, not many mighty, not many noble?* Paule doth not speake of the counsel of God, who will that al men shall be saued

Howe farre some are de-  
ceiued in the  
doctrine of  
election.



cap 2 25  
Epistle of S. James.

19

saued and come vnto the acknowledging of the truth.  
1. *Timoth.* 2. Which would haue no man to perish, but would  
all men to come to repentaunce. 2. *Pet.* 3. But he accuseth  
the naughtines of men, which abuse the gistes of God to  
their owne destruction. The Gospell calleth all, but some  
pretend one thing, some an other, whereby they doe not  
come. Many being encised, and as it were made drunken  
with wisdom, many with might, many with noblenes,  
many with riches, many also with other thinges cannot  
abide the sweete savour of the Gospell. Whereby it com-  
meth to passe that not by the counsell of God, which hath  
created no man to certayne damnation, but by their owne  
fault they are not elect. For God will haue all at length to  
be saued if so be that they doe embrace by fayth the autho-  
r of their saluation. They which contemne him, doe worthe-  
ly fall away from saluation. For God will cast awaye  
those and condemne them, no other wise then an earthly  
father doth cast of and disherit an obstinate and disobe-  
dient sonne, which he woulde not haue done if he had o-  
beyed his father. If therefore we consider the counsell of  
purpose of our creation and restoring againe by Christ:  
God in decde will haue all men to be saued, but yet by sal-  
uation and life, that is by Christ the mediator. But if  
thou marke the euent or ende, he will condemne all, which  
haue not obeyed him calling by his Gospell. This is con-  
firmed by the saying of y<sup>e</sup> Lord in *Matthew*: many be cal-  
led, but few be chosen. Of this saying there are two parts,  
the first commendeth vnto vs the goodnes of God, which  
calleth many by his Gospel that they may be saued. For  
we must not thinke that God calleth them whom he will  
not haue saued. The latter part is a complaint of the great-  
test parte of men, which contemne the Gospell, and will  
not liue worthy of so noble a calling. Whereof Christ com-  
playneth in *Matthew*, where he is reprehended which had  
not a wedding garment, to the which reprehension after-

Why so few  
come, when  
as God calleth  
all by his  
worde.

God will haue  
all to be saued,  
but yet by  
such meanes  
as he hath ap-  
pointed, which  
they that re-  
fuse, are iustly  
condemned.

*Math.* 20:16  
Many be cal-  
led, but fewe  
be chosen,  
howe it is to  
be vnderstand

J. iiii.

warde



cap 2 15-6

## A Commentarie vpon the

**Matth. 22. 12.** ward is ioyned this complaynt of Christe: few are chosen. This complaynt he also sheweth with teares. **Matth. 23.** whē he saith. *How often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the hen gathereth the chickens vnder her wings and ye would not? Behold Christ will, Hierusalē will not.* The meaning therefore of the saying of the Lord is: many be called, to wit, to obtayne saluation by Christ, so that they will beleue the Gospell. But fewe be chosen, that is, fewe haue the wedding garment, that is, fewe doe beleue and are godly in deede. That this is the signification of the word election, it is manifest out of the psalme, where elect and peruerse or frowarde are set one against the other, for he sayth thus: *with the elect thou shalt be elect, and with the froward thou shalt be froward.* Therefore he is sayd to be elect which is in deede a godly and sincere worshipper of God, keeping sayth and a good conscience. Therefore there is no cause that any man should be troubled with thinking of his election, as though God had appointed some certayne men to saluation, and the greatest part of men to certayne damnation: but rather let him thinke, that this is the vnmoueable will of God, that as he will saue without difference all that be penitent: so on the contrarie he will condemne all that be impenitent. And these are saide not to be elect, because of the euent or ende. For they haue shutte from them selues the way of saluation. Let vs therefore obey the Gospell, let vs liue in true repentance, let vs not suffer our selues to be caried away from Christ with the cares of this world. But rather let vs preferre obedience toward the Gospell before al things of the world, whereby we may obtayne the saluation promised through our Lorde Iesus Christ, in whom God hath chosen the beleuers before y<sup>e</sup> foundations of the world.

6. But ye haue despised the poore.

By this setting of one contrarie against the other, he sheweth the grieuousnesse of the sinne. God doth honoure the

**Psal. 118. 25.**

Whom God will saue and whom he will condemne.

What al they must doe which mynde and desire to attayne saluation through Christ.

The poore in no wise to be contemned.



Epistle of S. James.

cap 2 7 8 9

the poore that beleue, but you do despise the poore. Your sinne therefore is grieuous and vnworthie of the heires of the kingdome of God.

6 Doe not the rich oppresse you by tyrannie, and doe they not drave you before the iudgement seates?

7 Doe not they blaspheme the vvorthe name, after vvhich ye be named?

In these wordes are conteyned two plaine arguments. It is a foolish thing for men to honoz them of whom they are oppressed and tormented, and to contemne them that excell in true godlynesse. You doe that when you doe honour your rich men which are tyrannes with the reproche and disdayne of the poze. The vngodly rich men do blaspheme that wozthy name of Christ, whereby you will be named, and whereof you are called Christians, therefore it is an vnworthie thing that you shoulde honour them with the contempt of the poore.

Vngodly rich men must not be honoured with contempt of godly poore men.

8 But if ye fulfill the royall lawe according to the Scripture, vvhich sayth: Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, ye doe vvell.

9 But if ye regarde the persons, ye commit sinne, and are rebuked of the lawe as transgressours.

This is a preuenting of an obiection. For he preuenteth the obiection of hypocrates, by the which they might excuse themselues, that they did well in honouring rich men, seeing that honour is included in the loue which the lawe doth require toward our neighbour. He aunswereth by a double condition: If you fulfill (that is, if you endeuer by true fayth and integritie of mynde to perfozme it without colouring or hypocrisie. For here the worde of fulfilling is to be referred not to the degrees, but to the substance of obedience, or to the parts therof) the royall lawe, (that is, the lawe which is like the kings hie way, that is, streight and playne, which leadeth the wayfaring man without turnings to the place appointed. But that kings hie way

chosen.  
Lamb. 23.  
by children  
ber wings  
it will not.  
ad is: many  
it, so that  
sen, that is,  
e doe beleue  
pification of  
me, where v-  
gramit the o-  
hale be elect.  
Therefore he  
and sincere  
d conscience,  
ould be trou-  
God had ap-  
d the greatest  
ather let him  
God, that as he  
nitent: so on  
penitent. And  
ment of ende-  
way of salua-  
us line in true  
caried away  
But rather let  
foze al things  
saluation pro-  
in whom God  
of the world.  
e other, he  
doth honour  
the



cap 2 ver 10<sup>n</sup>

## A Commentarie vpon the

is to loue our neighbour, and to consider this only in him, that he is our neighbour, and to haue respect to no other things in him, ye doe vwell, that is, your defence is iust. But if ye regarde the person, ye commit sinne, but that you regarde the person, it is manifest by your deede. For you honor wicked rich men, and despise godly poore men, which truly is not to go in the kings hie way to the loue of your neighbour.

10 For vvhosoeuer shall keepe the vvhole lauv and yet faileth in one poynt, he is giltie of all.

11 For he that sayd, thou shalt not commit adulterie, sayd also, Thou shalt not kill. Novv though thou doest none adulterie, yet if thou killest, thou art a transgressour of the lavve.

He doth more forcibly vige the hypocrates, which did flatter them selues when as in one poynt of the law they had done their duty well, whose hypocrisie he reprehendeth by this argument: he which breaketh some one point of the law, is a transgressor of the lawe and giltie by the iudgement of the lawe. For he hath broken the whole law. This is declared by propounding an example of the \* fift and sixe commaundement. He which of this place doth contend either that all sins are alike, or that the giltines of euery transgression is equale, doth wrongfully vnderstande and take the wordes of the Apostle, who in this place doth deale only with hypocrates which did iudge the perfection of the lawe in part, agaynst whome the Apostle setteth transgression in part. But that sinnes be not alike or equall, as the Stoickes woulde haue them, first it is euident by the causes. For who doth not perceyue that it is more grieuous to sinne of maliciousnes, than of infirmitie or ignorance. Secondly, the euent proueth the same. He which sinneth wittingly and willingly, doth as it were shake of the holy ghost, but he that falleth through weaknesse, doth not so. Thirdly, the vnequalitie of the punishment,

He that faileth in one poynt of the lawe is giltie of the whole lawe.

The sixt and seuenth according to our diuision.

Diuers reasons which proue that all sinnes are not alike, as the Stoicks doe falsly affirme.



top: 2 of 12 23

## Epistle of S. James.

21

ment, wherewith God the iust iudge punisheth, doth conclude the vnequalitie of sinnes. *That seruānt that knevve* Luk. 12. 47. *his maisters will, and prepared not himselfe, neyther did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.* Fourthly, euery mans owne conscience doth naturally vnderstande the degrees of sinnes, for they are vexed with some moze, with some lesse. Fifthly, the lawe of God and all ciuill lawes doe acknowledge degrees of sinnes according to which they doe moderate punishments. The arguments of the Stoickes haue a fayre shewe, but they are grounded on a false foundation, agaynst which let those reasons be set which I haue rehearsed.

12 So speake ye, and so doe, as they that shall be iudged by the lawe of libertie.

13 For there shal be condemnation mercilesse to him that sheveth not mercie, and mercie reioyceth agaynst iudgement.

He byingeth in a generall exhortation to liue godly and holdly, by an argument taken of the sentence of the last iudgement, which is recited *Matth. 25.* For when as the Apostle sayth: as they that shall bee iudged by the lawe of libertie, he hath relation to the sentence of the Lorde, who when he iudgeth the worlde, shall saye vnto them on his right hand: *Come ye blessed of my father, take the inheritance of the kingdome prepared for you from the foundations of the worlde. For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me meate. &c.* Contrariwise he shall say to them on the left hande: *Depart from me ye cursed into euerlasting fire. I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meate. &c.* To this pertayneth that saying: *Iohn. 5.* The houre shall come in the which all that are in the graues, shal heare his voice, and they shall come forth, that haue done good vnto the resurrection of life: but they that haue done euell vnto the resurrection of condemnation. And *2. Cor. 5.* We must all appeare before the iudgement seate of Christ, that euery man

G.i.

may

*Matth. 25. 34.*  
The sentence  
of the last iud-  
gement, and  
the maner  
thereof.

*Iohn. 5. 28.*



cap 2 vers 13

## A Commentarie vpon the

may receiue the things which are done in his bodie, according to that he hath done whether it be good or euill. That these sayings and such like are to be vnderstand of the qualitie of thē that shal be saued, & not of the causes of saluation, the whole consent of y<sup>e</sup> scripture, yea, the precious blood of Christ doth shew, as shortly after I will more distinctly declare. But why doth he call it y<sup>e</sup> law of libertie? That by that name he may shew y<sup>e</sup> frutes of libertie are by good right required of christians. For as he which doth commit sinne, is the seruant of sinne: so he which is deliuered by Christ, will be no more bonde but free, & therefore will not take vpon him the yoke of bondage. He sheweth a cause or reason when he sayth: for there shall be condemnation mercilesse to him that sheweth not mercie, but he that sheweth mercie, is so farre of from being condemned, y<sup>e</sup> he shal reioyce against cōdemnation, triumphing ouer death, sin, and the deuill. These things doe teach, how necessary continuall repentance and a perpetuall studie of godlynesse and righteousnesse is among Christians, least by their owne fault they lose the free benefit of saluation. But because the aduersaries of free saluation doe abuse this place and such like, and make the causes of saluation of the tokens and qualities of them which shall be saued, I will brievely gather an aunswere, whereby the godly reader may haue, wherewith he maye be able thoroughly and truly to answere to this false cauill. Seeing therefore that the Scripture doth expressely say, that the Lord shall giue to euery man according to his deedes. Or as Paule speaketh to the Corinthians: according to that euery man hath done whether it be good or euill: First of all, this is to be helde, that this generall sentence which is the very voyce of God himselte, ought to be applied vnto two sortes of men, according to the proportion of sayth, that is, to the wicked, according to the lawe, to the godly, according to the Gospell after this maner: when the Lord giueth vnto

Why the Apostle calleth  
it the lawe of  
libertie.

Math. 16.27.

1 Cor. 5.10.

How the sentence of the  
last iudgement is to be  
applied to the  
wicked, and  
how to the  
godly.



cap 2 vry 130

Epistle of S. James. 22

the wicked according to their dedes, without all doubt he giueth vnto them hel and condemnation. For those are the merites of the dedes of vngodlines. But concerning y godly or regenerate, there are no things to be considered. For first it is euident out of the infallible worde of God, that eternall life is not the wages of seruantes, but the inheritance of childzen, and the free gift of God. Rom. 4.5.6.8. Iohn. 1.3.5. Secondly, the proportion betwene the heauely father and an earthly father is to be considered: for as an earthly father doth giue vnto his childzen according to their dedes, that is, inheritance to them that are obedient, and disheriteth them that are disobedient: so God the father promisseth inheritance to his childzen, but those which of childzen are made obstinate and enemies, he suffreth not to enioy the inheritance. But nowe it is manifest that the childzen of an earthly father are neither childzen nor heires through desert of their workes. After the same sort the childzen of God are neyther made childzen nor heires because of their workes, but through the grace of adoption, which is receyued by fayth alone, notwithstanding eyther of them doth giue vnto his childzen according to their dedes. But y this may yet be moze plainly vnderstand, how God shall giue to euery mā according to his dedes, foure circumstances are to be weighed of vs, the first wherof is, that the rigour of the law is takē away from y godly, according to y saying Galat. 3. Christ hath redemed vs from the curse of the lawe. The seconde is, that the person nowe beleeuing doth by fayth please God and is heire of eternall life. Iohn. 1. The thirde, that God doth not onely require obedience of the person that beleueth, but also doth promise him a rewarde, and that not of debt for the worthinesse of the worke, but of grace for his fatherly promise sake: The fourth, that workes so done by fayth, are testimonies of fayth, as proper effectes are most certaine tokens of their cause. And therefore it is sayde that God shall giue vnto

et al mivv  
the mivv  
on gubhoo  
abbe

Ve are heires  
not through  
workes but  
through grace

G.ii. euery

ie, accor  
ill. That  
of the qua  
of saluati  
rious blou  
re distinct  
e. That by  
are by god  
doth commit  
delivered by  
foye will not  
th a cause of  
ademption  
but he that  
denied, y he  
g ouer death,  
now necessary  
die of godly  
ms, least by  
saluation. But  
we abuse this  
of saluation of  
the lauer, I  
e godly rea  
roughly and  
therefore that  
ord shall giue  
while sprea  
ery man hath  
this is to be  
re very hope  
two sytes of  
at is, to the  
according to  
giueth vnto  
the



cap 2 vry 3

## A Commentarie vpon the

Why it is  
sayd that eue-  
ry man shall  
be iudged ac-  
cording to his  
deedes.

every man according to his deedes, both because deedes are the true tokens of the feare of God & of fayth, and also that the whole creature maye beare witnesse of the iustice of God in iudging. This answere is taken from the conferring of the Scripture, which we must of necessitie surely hold, lest that with the Papistes we attribute saluation to the merits of works, or with the Antinomians and Libertines we lay aside all care and studie to do well. This solution is made manifest by an euident example. *Mat. 18.* where y<sup>e</sup> Lord saith that y<sup>e</sup> kingdome of heauen is likened vnto a certayne king, that is, that there is the same reason of the spiritual state of the Church, which is betweene an earthly king and his seruants in the affaires of this present life. For euen as the king, his seruant owing him ten thousand talents, yet when he fell downe and besought him, he forgauē him the whole dette freely and of his mere liberalitie: so God the father doth freely forgieue them all debtes, that is, sinnes, which flie vnto him for succour with trust and confidence in Christ. Hereof it is manifest that remission of sinnes is free. But euen as the king called agayne vnto punishment that seruant, being vnthankfull and cruell toward his fellowseruants, and that which before he forgauē him when he humbly besought him, now he requireth agayne of him being stubborne and cruell toward his fellowes: So God, after he hath receiued vs being sorte for our sinne, into fauour, will haue vs imitate his example in liberalitie and goodnes toward our neighbour. This the Lord teacheth *Luke. 7.* propounding an example of two debtors, the one whereof ought vnto the tender five hundred pence, and the other fiftie: who when they had nothing to pay, he forgauē them both. Here the Lord asked the Pharises whether of them will loue the tender most, to whom when the Pharise had made answer, he to whom he forgauē most, the Lord saith, thou hast truly iudged: signifying that God doth require



Epistle of S. James.

cap 2 ff. 19

quire thankfulness of them, whom he hath freely received into favour. Hereof are gathered two things, to wit, both that forgiveness is free, and also that they which have obtained forgiveness, doe owe thankfulness unto God.

14 VVhat auayleth it my brethren though a man sayth he hath fayth, vwhen he hath no vvorkes, can that fayth saue him?

Bicause there were among them to whom the Apostles did write, hypocrites, which when they were touched with no true repentance, yet they did boast that they were saued by fayth, when as they had no true and liuely fayth in dede: he maketh a confutation of their erroneous opinion, and teacheth that that fayth is vayne, which doth not bring forth it true fruites. This proposition is diligently to be marked, fayth which hath not workes is vneffectuall and vayne, or as James speaketh, cannot saue. This onely proposition is confirmed euen vnto the end of the chapter. Wherefore they are sowly deceiued which compare James with Paule, when as James disputeth onely of the vayne boasting of hypocrites, Paule of a liuely fayth. And therefore let vs diligently marke in this place, what fayth the Apostle calleth vayne, to wit that, which hath no obedience toward God accompanying it, in asmuch as it neither worshippeth God nor dooth wel to it neighbour, whereupon it manifestly followeth, that James doth not speake of a liuely and a right fayth, from which the spirit of Christ can not be separate. For where the spirit of Christ is, there are newe actions of the newe man, although not perfect, yet vnperfect, by which the force and vertue of fayth is acknowledged and brought forth. What therefore is that vaine fayth? is it altogether vneffectuall? It bringeth forth no good fruites, (for it is voyde of life) but it bringeth forth the bitter fruites of hell and death. For it is a most fruitfull mother of vanitie, superstition, and hypocrisie, it is a foolish boasting, it is but an image of fayth,

That fayth which bringeth not forth good workes, is not true, but vayne, and cannot saue.

Paule and James speake diuerly of fayth.

VVhat fruites a vayne and false fayth bringeth forth.

ords are also that the confesse- sicke surely saluation to and Liber- ff. This so- le. M. 18. en is likewi- e same reason betwene an- s of this pre- owing him and brought y and of his freely forgue e vnto him for. Verof it is ut even as the ruant, being seruants, and e humbly be- m being stub- bod, after he to famur, will to goodnes to h Luke. 7. pro- one whereof the other dis- ingane them other of them pharise had the Loyde God doth re- quire



### A Commentarie vpon the

it is a stoppe or let from saluation, it is a guider or leader vnto death, briesly it hath it portion with hypocrites and deuels.

- 15 For if a brother or a sister be naked and destitute of dayly foode,
- 16 And one of you saye vnto them, depart in peace, vvarme your selues, and fil your bellies, notwithstanding ye giue them not those thinges, vvhich are needeful to the body, vvhath helpeth it?
- 17 Euen so the faith, if it haue no vvorkes, is dead in it selfe.

He proueth by a very fit similitude that fayth without good workes is vaine.

He maketh manifest the proposition by a most apt similitude. Euen as that speech is vayne, wherein it is sayde to the needy, warme your selues and fill your bellies, when as helping handes are not also put to: so that fayth is vayne and dead which is in the mouth without the fruite of workes. Note here the name of faith, (which he calleth vaine) for when it is called deade, it is compared to a carcas, wherefore it deserueth no better to be called faith, then a carcas deserueth to be called a liuing creature. This vsing of one word for another doth sufficiently shew y<sup>e</sup> James doth dispute of a vayne opiniō, which of y<sup>e</sup> hypocrites was called faith, according therfore to the opinion y<sup>e</sup> they had of fayth, y<sup>e</sup> Apostle speaketh by a licence of rhetoricke.

- 18 But some man might say, thou hast the faith and I haue vvorkes: shew me thy faith out of thy vvorkes, and I vvill shewe thee my faith by my vvorkes.

Another reason prouing fayth which is without good workes to be vayne.

An other reason that faith which is voyde of it fruites is vayne, as if he sayde: some godly man, O thou hypocrite, may repress thy vanitie by obiecting thus vnto thee: thou hypocrite hast faith, as thou sayest, (for it is a licence of scorning) I haue workes, thou, if thou can, shew me thy faith by thy workes, which truly thou canst not doe, because thou hast none: I will shewe thee my fayth by my workes. Therefore it is manifest that thy faith is like vnto a dead

carcas



cap 2 of 19  
Epistle of S. James. 24

carcas, but that myne is liuely, which appeareth by the frutes and liuely motion therof. For euen as the spirite which is inwardly in a liuing creature quicke and lusty doth bewray it selfe by mouing and feeling and by the outward actions: so a liuely fayth doth shewe it selfe by good workes. The word fayth is here vbled in diuers significations. For in the first place it signifieth a boasting of fayth, but in the latter place a liuely fayth.

A proper similitude.

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God: thou doest well: the devils also beleeue it and tremble.

He teacheth both what the fayth of hypocrites is, also how vaine it is, yea and that it doth not saue. He affirmeth therefore that there fayth is only a knowledge of the hypocrisy. For they beleeue that there is a God. That this is vaine, he proueth by this reason: the fayth of the devils doth not saue. For the devils are not saued. The boasting of hypocrites is the fayth of the devils: for it hath nothing in it, which the fayth of the devils hath not. Therefore the boasting of the hypocrites which they falsly cal fayth, doth not saue, and therefore is bayne. Whereas the Apostle in this place doth acknowledge no other fayth in hypocrites, then is in the devils, it is no meruaile, because he taketh from it the power of iustifying. But of what sort fayth is in the disputations of Paule, it is taught Rom. 4. by a manifest example propounded, to wit, that it is not onely a knowledge of the mercy promised, but also a trust and confidence, wherby a man determineth with himselfe that the promises doth appertaine vnto him, wherwith is ioynded as an vnseparable companion thankfulness of mind toward God, prayer, patience, mortifying of the olde man, stirring by of the newe man, and other frutes of the righteousness of fayth, which frutes although they doe not iustifie, yet that is the nature of a iustifying fayth that it alwayes bringeth forth those frutes sometime more, sometime lesse, euen as it hath receiued increase.

Another reason prouing the fayth of hypocrites to be vayne and not able to saue.

What kynde of fayth Paule speaketh of.

Frutes of true fayth.

G.iiii.

20 Bug

to leaders  
rites and  
desire of  
in peace,  
noe with  
ges, which  
ie?  
es, is dead in  
ost are similit  
it is sayde to  
bellies, when  
that fayth is  
out the frute  
ich he calleth  
mpared to a  
be called fayth,  
reature. This  
ely sheweth  
of hypocrites  
opinion is they  
of rhetorick.  
he fayth and I  
of thy workes,  
y workes.  
of it frutes is  
how hypocrite,  
as vnto thee:  
it is a licence  
shew me thy  
at doe, because  
p my workes,  
e vnto a dead  
carcas



cap 2 y 20

## A Commentarie vpon the

- 20. But wilt thou vnderstand, O thou vaine man, that the faith vvhich is vvithout vvorkes is dead?
- 21. Vvas not Abraham our father iustified through vvorkes, vvhen he offred Isaac his son vpo the alter?
- 22. Seest thou not that the faith vvrought vvith his vvorkes? and through the vvorkes vvas the fayth made perfect.
- 23. And the Scripture vvas fulfilled vvhich sayth: Abraham beleued God and it vvas imputed vnto him for righteousnes: and he vvas called the friend of God.
- 24. Ye see then hovv that of vvorkes a man is iustified and not of faith onely.

That our faith ought to haue good vvorkes ioyned vvith it, it is proued by the example of Abraham.

What James meaneth by this word iustified, vvhich the Scholmen haue wrested, as it is proued by three firme and strong reasons. The first reason.

The summe of this reason is this: Such as the fayth of Abraham was, ought also the fayth of other beleeuers to be. (For he is therefore called the father of the beleeuers, bicause that they that beleue ought to imitate and follow his fayth): but the fayth of Abraham had vvorkes ioyned vvith it (vvhich is thereby proued, bicause he did so much esteeme obedience toward God, that he vvould rather kill his onely sonne, then not obey God) Therefore the fayth of other also ought to haue vvorkes ioyned vvith it, vvhich if it haue not, it is vvorthely to be accounted vaine and dead. This is the summe of the argument. Now let vs wey the vvordes of the Apostle, vvhich are wrested of the Schoolemen against free iustification. First the word iustified is to be discussed, vvhich is as much, as if he had sayd, vvvas declared to be iust, or vvvas knowen to be iustified and that this is so I proue by three necessarie arguments. The first is taken of the scope and end of this present disputatiō. For James hath not purposed a disputation of the causes of iustification, but onely doth shew by vvhat effects iustification may be gathered, and as it were set before the eyes of men. Seing therefore it is an exceeding great error, of effects to make causes in respect of the same thing,



Epistle of S. James.

thing, they are by no meanes to be borne, which forgetting the scope & ende of the disputation & proposition that is to be proued, presume very high, & go about to disproue the doctrine of Paul concerning free iustification, when as the purpose of Paul was far otherwise thā of James. For Paul seeth the cause of iustification: James the effects of the same: Paul descendeth frō h causes to h effects: James contrariwise ascendeth frō the effects to h causes. Paul seeth how we are iustified: James how we are declared to be iustified. Paule excludeth works as causes of iustification: James includeth the same, as the effectes of iustification. Seing there is so great difference betwene the purpose of Paule and James, who seeth not the vanitie of the Scholmen, which say that the Apostles are contrary the one to the other. The seconde necessarie argument is taken of the order of the causes and the effects, *Genes. 15.* Abraham is pronounced to be iustified. *Abraham beleued the Lord, and he counted that to him for righteousnesse.* But this came to passe thirtie yeares at the least, befoze he receyued a commaundement concerning the offering of his sonne Isaac. *Genes. 22.* Howe therefore can it be that he shoulde be sayde to be iustified by that worke, which he did the thirtie yere after h he was by the voyce of God said to be iustified. It is necessarie therfoze that to be iustified in James doe signifie to be declared iustified.

The thirde necessarie argument is taken of the wordes of the Angell, *Genes. 22.* After that Abraham had purposed to kil his sonne at the commaundement of God, & was called back from his purpose by the voyce of the Angel, he heareth of the Angell: *Now I know that thou fearest God, seing for my sake thou hast not spared thine only son.* What other thing, I pray you, do these wordes meane, than that h voluntarie obedience of Abraham was a testimonie of the feare of God, & a certaine declaration of the iustification of Abraham. And thus briezly it is declared, what the word

P.i.

of

Paule and James are nothing contrarye the one to the other, but there is difference onely in the purpose of them both.

The second reason concerning the taking of this word iustified

The third infallible argument concerning the taking of this word iustified *Gen. 22. 12.*

an, that  
ad?  
through  
the altar  
with his  
the sayth  
h sayth: A  
pured vno  
led the friend  
is iustified  
the sayth of  
belieuers to  
be beleuers,  
itate and fol  
worshes ioy  
cause he did so  
he would ra  
Therefore  
is ioynd with  
counted vaine  
it. Now let  
we wrested of  
first the word  
th, as if he had  
to be iustified  
ie arguments,  
his present dis  
putation of the  
what effects  
set befoze the  
ing great ev  
of the same  
thing,



cap 2 of 25

# A Commentarie vpon the

of iustification doth signifie in this disputation of James. Afterwarde when he sayth that the fayth vvrought vvith his vvorkes, he expresseth the nature of a liuely fayth, to wit, that it is effectuell and full of good vvorkes. Seeing that the fayth of hypocrites hath not this nature, it is in no case to be iudged a true and liuely fayth. This saying therfore of James doth teach nothing else, but that good vvorkes doe proceede of fayth. That which James addeth through the vvorkes, the fayth vvvas made perfect, is nothing els than y the fayth of Abraham was declared by his vvorkes, not to haue bene counterfait or hypocriticall, but true and sincere. For if thou doest cal that perfect here, which is in it degrees absolute, no mortall man liuing at any time hath had a perfect fayth. Hozeouer, when he sayth that the scripture was fulfilled which saith: Abraham beleued God, and it vvvas impued vnto him for righteousnesse, that is not to be referred vnto the cause, but vnto the effect. For by that deede Abraham declared that he was in very deede iustified befoze by fayth. This fulfilling therfore ought to be referred to the experience of men, and not to the iudgement of God.

What it meaneth that Abrahams faith was made perfect thowvvorkes.

Another example that true fayth is not destitute of good vvorkes.

Hypocrites fayth is vaine.

25 Likevvise also vvvas not Rahab the harlot iustified through vvorks, vvhen she had receyued the messengers, and sent them out another vvay?

He proueth by another example y a true & a liuely faith is not vvithout vvorks. Rahab by her dede or vvorks declared hit selfe to be iustified by fayth, vvhen vvith the perill of her life she sent away y messengers of the people of God, least they shoulde come into the hands of them that sought them.

26 For as the bodie vvithout the spirit is dead: euen so the fayth vvithout vvorkes is deade.

By a most apt similitude propounded, he proueth that the fayth of hypocrites is vayne, in as much as it is like a deade bodie or carkas, wherein is no liuely spirit, and there-



top 2 of 26

Epistle of S. James. No 26

therefore no mouing or sense of a liuing creature is founde in it. And thus James by fixe firme reasons hath moued that a true fayth is frutefull in good workes, and that the fayth of hypocrites, which is boyd of workes, is a bayne boasting rather than fayth.

A declaration of the doctrine of repentance.

When as Christ doth define the Gospell to be preaching of repentance and forgiuenesse of sinnes in his name: he setteth forth two things vnto vs, whereof one is the benefite which the Gospell offereth, the other, the meanes by which the benefite is applyed vnto men. The benefite which is offered, is forgiuenesse of sinnes. The meanes is repentance. For they onely which repent, are made partakers of the forgiuenesse of sinnes, wherewith is ioyned iustification, saluation, and eternall lyfe. Hereof it easily appeareth, that nothing is moze necessarye for a man in this life, than to vnderstande wherein true repentance consisteth, without the which forgiuenesse of sinnes commeth vnto no man. Of this wholsome and true repentance I will speake, and will so declare the matter by the worde of God, and manifest examples, that euery man may acknowledge the truth and playnes thereof.

The foundation therfore of the preaching of repentance without all doubt is the mercie and grace of God, according to these sayings: Repent, for the kingdome of God is at hande. Nowe the kingdome of God is the kingdome of grace, in which Christ being a King and Priest doth reygne. Ierem. 36. Returne euery man from his euill waye, that I may forgiue their iniquitie and their sinnes. Againe, I desire not the death of the wicked, returne and come agayne. Also, O ye disobedient children returne and I will heale your rebellions. And Christ saith: I am not come to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance.

These testimonies doe sufficiently proue that mercye through

H. li.

The Gospell is the preaching of repentance and forgiuenesse of sinnes.

The first foundation of the preaching of repentance. Matth. 3.2.

Ierem. 36.3.

Ezech. 33.11.

Ierem. 3.22.

Matth. 9.13.

James, ... the experience ...



A Commentarie vpon the

through Christ is the foundation of the preaching of repentance. For without all doubt, repent, or as the Prophetes speake, returne, is not the voyce of the lawe condemning, but of God hauing mercie, and offering saluation, life and deliuerance from the sentence of the lawe that condemneth. Wherefore there is no doubt but the preaching of repentance is a part of the preaching of the Gospell, especiallye since it is manifest that the lawe doth preach vnto sinners eternall punishment: and Christ being rayled by from the dead, doth affirme that repentance and forgiveness of sinnes is to be preached in his name. But bicause there are two things in man which doe hinder him that he cannot see his euilles, and repent and amende at the voyce of the Gospell, to wit, ignorance and dulnesse or sluggishnesse. The Lorde doth giue a remedie for both these euils. He remedieth ignorance by the lawe. For by the preaching of the lawe he bringeth vs to the knowledge of sinne, whereof the Gospell biddeth vs repent, that we may be saued. By the lawe, as Paule sayth, commeth the knowledge of sinne. Dulnesse or sluggishnesse he shaketh of by diuers meanes: he setteth forth threatenings of eternall death, he denounceth wrath and displeasure agaynst them that doe not amende. He chasteneth the impenitent with corporal punishments, with diseases, and by diuers other meanes, he setteth tragicall and lamentable examples before their eyes, as of Cain, Iudas, Saule, Achitophel, and diuers others, which examples Christ doth applie vnto all, when he sayth: Except ye amende your liues, ye shall all likewise perishe. He witnesseth his wrath and displeasure by diuers signes in the heauen, the earth, and in the sea, sometime by pestilence, sometime by warres he stirreth vs vp to obey the voyce of the Gospell: he setteth forth the death of his sonne, which doth witness of the wrath of God agaynst sinners, except they repent, Act. 2. Christ which calleth all that be weary and laden,

Two things  
ther be which  
hinder repen-  
tance in vs,  
wherunto the  
Lord addeth  
remedies.

A remedie a-  
gaynt our  
ignorance.

Rom. 3. 20.

How the Lord  
driueth away  
our sluggish-  
nesse

Luke. 13. 3.



cap 2. 26

Epistle of S. James. 27

den, vnto him, & they being conuerted by repentance, may be eased of their burden, doth sende the Lawyer, that doth not acknowledge his euill, vnto the law. We haue a most excellent and liuely example hereof Luk. 15. in the prodigall sonne. He being first pinched with hunger, doth perceiue his euill. Then a hope of a better state if he did returne to his father, gaue to the yong man a mynde to repent, for he is encouraged by confidence in his fathers gentlenesse, to seeke for reconciliation. This example doth teach plainly, that the beginning of repentance is an acknowledging of the mercy of God, which stirreth vs vp to hope well, which doe see and perceiue our owne euils and perils. For as this yong man through trust in his fathers clemencie, doth returne vnto his father, after that he being taught by hunger did perceiue his euils: so we with confidence of mercy in Christ, doe returne vnto God, after that by the preaching of the lawe we haue come into the knowledge of our selues, & by feeling the curse and wrath of God doe shake of our dulnesse and sluggishnesse.

A liuely example.

Nowe what wholesome and true repentance is, and of what partes it consisteth, we will declare by testimonies of the Scripture, and by examples. Ieremie sayth: Let euery man returne from his euill way, and I will forgieue your iniquitie and your sinnes. This saying conteyneth two things, a commaundement and a promise. The commaundement is, that the vngodly doe returne from his euill wayes. The promise is of reconciliation and attonement for sinne. Herebyon it is gathered, that repentance is a conuersion or a turning of man vnto God, in the which conuersion, he doth depart from euill, he beleueth the promise of reconciliation, and studieth to leade a newe lyfe according to the will of God.

What true repentance is.

Adam hauing fallen into sinne, did hyde himselfe with the leaues which he tooke of the tree, and did not see his euill, neyther as yet did knowe the promise concerning the

H.iii. seede

of re- the pro- late con- my salu- he law that t the pre- of the Go- lawe doth d Christ be- r repentance n his name. hich doe him- pment and a- noyance and e a remedie by the law. th vs to the doth vs re- Saule sayth, sluggishnesse for the theate- and displea- hatness the diseases, and and lamenta- Ludas, Saule, mples Christ is ye amende ineneth his e heauen, the sometime by the Gospella th witnesse ye they re- ary and la- det;



copy 2: 26

# A Commentarie vpon the

Howe Adam  
by little and  
little came  
vnto true re-  
pentance.

Dauid an ex-  
ample wherin  
the partes of  
true repen-  
tance are liue-  
ly set forth.

Pfal. 38. 3.

2. Sam. 12. 13.

Pfal. 51. 1.

ver. 15.  
ver. 13.

seede: but when he is accused by the voyce of God threatning death vnto him, he acknowledgeth his sinne, which also did exceedingly displease him, so that there was in him a misliking of his fact, but not true repentance. But when he heareth the promise concerning the seede of the woman, which shoulde come, and breake the heade of the serpent and aboli the sinne: he returneth vnto the Lorde with true repentance, he is sozie for his sinne, he comforteth himselfe with the fayth of the promise, calleth vpon God, and taketh heede least that agayne he doth agaynst his conscience offende God. Dauid hauing fallen into adulterie, being as it were lulled a sleepe with a certayne drowsinesse, doth liue securely, but when he is reprehended of the Prophet, he begynneth to lament his sinne, and there were in him horrible terrours and extreme feare which he himselfe describeth in the Psalmes: *There is no rest in my bones bicause of my sinne: for he did feare euerlasting punishment. But hearing this voyce of the Prophet by the commaundement of God: Thou shalt not die, the Lorde hath put away thy sinne: He turneth agayne vnto the Lorde and repenteth, he hatech his sinne, he flieth vnto mercie by fayth, saying: Haue mercie vpon me O God, according to thy louing kindenesse. He promiseth obedience in time to come: My mouth shall shewe forth thy prayse. Also, I shall teach thy wayes vnto the wicked, and sinners shall be conuerted vnto thee.* In this example also we see what conuersion is, what is the foundation and partes thereof. Lyke vnto this were the examples of Manasses, of the sinfull woman, of the theefe, of Peter, of Paule: which examples when we doe applie them to the rule, they doe most plainly set before vs the liuely formes of true repentance. But bicause the doctrine of repentance is chiefe in the Church, and bicause it is very profitable for men to be well instructed concerning it: we will briezly declare by definitions the partes thereof, as they



cap 2. 26

Epistle of S. James. 28

they are taught in our Churches oute of the word of God and by famous and well knowne examples. The partes thereof as is sayd before are contrition, fayth, and newe obedience.

The partes of true repentance.

Contrition is not a misliking of the fact, as was in Judas, but it is the beginning of true repentance, to wit, an extreme feare of conscience for sinne, a true hatred of sinne, and an auoyding of sinne not without hope of pardon, as appeareth in the prodigall sonne. For a knowledge of mercy must of necessitie goe before true repentance, according to the saying of Ambrose: No man can repent except first he hopeth for pardon: and that of Augustine. The mercye of God is necessary not onely when we doe repent, but also that we may repent.

Contrition the first part of repentance what it is.

Fayth is a knowledge, consent, and desire of the promised mercy, and a sure confidence in Christ the mediator. Although the former examples and the fourth chap. to the Rom. doe confirme this definition, yet let vs adde more reasons concerning the properties of fayth. Christ pronounceth them saued that beleene, therfore it must needes be that fayth doth signifie a trust in the promise, seeing that no man is saued by knowledge alone. Agayne, Paule doth sometime call this fayth a sure trust or confidence, sometime a perswasion, whereby a man doth certaynely perswade himselfe, that God both will, and also is able to performe that which he hath promised. This therfore is that fayth, by which alone without the workes of the law the Apostle affirmeth that a man is iustified before God. For such a fayth onely as we haue described, doth apprehende Christ and possesse him with all his benefites. I will therfore set forth a playne and manifest doctrine concerning this iustification which commeth by fayth in Christ, and will briefly confute the errours with the which this doctrine both in time past and also in our age, is darkned and made obscure.

What fayth is, which is the seconde part of true repentance.

V.iiii.

Iustifi-

theate  
which  
was im  
nce. But  
rde of the  
ade of the  
the Lorde  
he confor  
leth bypon  
oth agayn  
allen into a  
a certayne  
s reprehens  
is sinne, and  
rome feare  
There is no  
feare euer  
of the Ho  
shalt not die  
meth agayne  
sinne, he lie  
ie upon me O  
omisseth obe  
me forth by  
wicked, and  
example also  
ndation and  
examples of  
fe, of Peter,  
pplie them to  
the lively for  
me of repen  
is very pro  
ing it: we  
thereof, as  
they



cap 2 v. 26

# A Commentarie vpon the

The definition  
of iustifi-  
cation.

Fayth.

Rom. 3. 28.

Deliueraunce  
from sinne.

1. Iohn. 1. 7.

Psal. 32. 1. 2.

Iohn. 9. 36.  
Imputation  
of righteous-  
nesse.

Justification is a deliuerance from sinne of the man that doth beleue in Christ, an imputation of the righteousnesse of Christ, and an accepting of him being iustified to life euerlasting, freely for Christes sake. In this definition five principall poynts are to be considered. First sayth by which the grace which is offered, is receyued, whereupon Paule sayth: *we are iustified by fayth.* For fayth is as it were a certayne hande, wherewith we receyue Christ offered vnto vs, with his obedience, that it may be our righteousnesse. The seconde is a clensing or deliuerance from sinne through the satisfaction made by Iesus Christ, according to that saying of Iohn: *The bloude of Iesus Christ clenseth vs from all sinne.* To this also belongeth that saying of Dauid: *Blessed is he, whose wickednes is forgiven.* Also, *Blessed is the man vnto whome the Lorde imputeth not iniquitie.* What deliuerance is, it is to be gathered by y definition of sinne. For as sinne is a defect or reuolting from the lawe and will of God, with a bonde vnto eternall death and condemnation: so deliuerance is the discharging or setting free of a man from the bonde of death and condemnation. But that this deliuerance doth come vnto him that beleueth in Christ, many testimonies doe witness. *He that beleueth in the son, hath euerlasting life.* The third is the imputation of y righteousness of Christ. For his obedience, death, passion, and resurrection are the matter & foundation of our iustification. 2. Cor. 5. *He hath made him to be sinne for vs, which knew no sinne, that we shoulde be made the righteousnesse of God in him.* This righteousness, which he sayth that we are made in him, the Apostle defineth Rom. 5. when he sayth: *As by one mans disobedience many were made sinners: so by the obedience of one shall many also be made righteous.* Christian righteousnesse therefore is the obedience of Christ imputed to the beleuer. For fayth is imputed to hym for righteousnesse, which beleueth in him that iustifieth the



cap 2 ff 25

Epistle of S. James. 29

the wicked. Of these this also followeth, that the qualitie of righteousness is in Christ, but is imputed unto vs which is proper unto him. For we are so iust before God as Christ was a sinner. As he after a sort tooke vpon him our person, whereby he might be made guiltie in our name, and might be iudged as a sinner, not for his owne sinnes, but for the sinnes of other, seeing that he himselfe was pure and cleane frō all sinne, and might suffer punishment due vnto vs and not vnto him: So we nowe are iust in him, not because we do satisfie the iudgement of God with our workes, but because we are accounted righteous with the righteousness of Christ, which by fayth alone we doe put on, that it might be made ours. The fourth is an accepting of the person vnto eternall life. For Paule setteth this degree after iustification. Rom. 8. Whom he iustified, & he also glorified. To this belongeth the saying of the Lorde: He that beleueth in me shall not perish, but shall haue euerlasting lyfe. The fift, freely for Christes sake: freely that all the merites of men maye be excluded: for Christes sake, that the redemption of the onely begotten sonne of God may be acknowledged to be the merit of so great a treasure.

Howe we are righteous before God.

Accepting of vs vnto eternall lyfe.

Although this doctrine of our Churches is grounded vpon the iust, sounde, and persite worde of God: yet there be diuerse and sundrie errors spred abzode agaynst it. For there be some which place this iustification of man in the workes done of men: other some will needes haue it to consist of fayth and workes together: some go about to establish a certayne essentiall righteousness. Although these things which we haue spoken, doe confute the errors of these, yet we will speake somewhat leuerally of them. They which affirme that mā is iustified by workes, are moze easily confuted, seeing that the most manifest oracles of God doe crie out agaynst this error. David cryeth out openly: Enter not into iudgement with thy ser-

Diuers errors in the doctrine of iustification.

The first error of them which saye that we are iustified by workes, with a confutation thereof.

Psal. 143. 2.

uant: Psal. 143. 2.

man that  
righteous  
advised to  
definition  
it sayth by  
whereupon  
th is as it  
Christ of  
be our righ  
rance from  
Christ, ac  
Iesus Christ  
th that say  
is forgiven,  
be imputed  
gathered by  
reuoiting  
e vnto eter  
is the dis  
nde of death  
er doth come  
manies doe  
raising lyfe.  
of Christ.  
tion are the  
w. He hath  
me, that we  
him. This  
e in him, she  
by one man  
be obedience  
istian righ  
it imputed  
o hym for  
at iustified  
the



cap. 2 bey 25

## A Commentarie vpon the

Gal. 3. 10.

Gal. 2. 21.

The seconde  
error of them  
which affirme  
that wee are  
iustified by  
fayth and  
workes togi-  
ther, and the  
same cofuted.

Verse. 6.

uant: for in thy sight shall none that liueth be iustified. And  
Paule Rom. 3. Therefore by the workes of the lawe shal no  
fleshe be iustified. And to the Galath. As manye as are of  
the workes of the lawe, are vnder the curse. Agayne: If  
righteousnesse be by the lawe, then Christ died without a  
cause. Their opinion therefore is manifestly false, which  
affirme that a man is iustified, that is, made iust by  
workes. But we acknowledge with James, that good  
workes are required to the declaring of this iustification,  
that the good tree may be knowne by it fruites, neyther  
is there any disagreeing betweene Paule and James.  
For when Paul sayth that a mā is not iustified by workes,  
he signifieth that he is not made iust and without fault be-  
fore God by workes. When James sayth that men are  
iustified by workes, he meaneth that men are by workes  
declared to be iust. But the saying of them hath somewhat  
a fayrer shewe, which affirme that the righteousnesse  
whereby the wicked man is iustified before God, doth con-  
sist of fayth and workes together. For they saye that fayth  
is the beginning of righteousnesse, and workes the per-  
fection thereof, whose error S. Paule confuteth by these  
reasons. Rom. 10. I beare them recorde that they haue the  
zeale of God, but not according to knowledge. For they being  
ignorant of the righteousnes of God, and going about to sta-  
blishe their owne righteousnes, haue not submitted them-  
selues to the righteousnes of God. For Christ is the ende of  
the lawe for righteousnes vnto euerye one that beleueth.  
Here Paule maketh this to be the cause of the casting of  
of the Jewes, for that they woulde ioyne their owne righ-  
teousnesse with the righteousnesse of God which is by  
fayth, and of both ioyned together make one forme of  
righteousnesse. Also Rom. 11. he reasoneth thus: If it be  
of grace, it is no more of workes, or else were grace no more  
grace: but if it be of workes, it is no more grace, or else were  
worke no more worke. Paule here first letteth downe two  
contrarie



Epistle of S. James.

cap 2 of 26

contrarie propolitions without any meane betwene them: If election and saluation be of woꝝkes, it is not of grace: If it be of grace, it is not of woꝝkes, bicause that debt and gift are so contrarie, that neither of them may rightly be sayde one of the other, or both of them of any thirde. Eytter therfore we are iustified and saued by fayth alone, or by woꝝkes: but the testimonies before alledged doe proue that no man is iustified by woꝝkes. Agayne, if christian righteousnesse did consist of fayth and woꝝkes togither, the reasoning of Paule were sonde and vayne. Rom. 4. To him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour but by debt: but to him that worketh not, but beleueth in him that iustifieth the vngodly, his fayth is counted for righteousnesse. Here Paule maketh two sortes of righteousnesse, which differ the one from the other. For they haue contrarie causes. For the righteousnesse of fayth, by which he that beleueth is iustified, is imputed and giuen freely, but the righteousnesse of woꝝkes is not free. Furthermore, if one part is to be attributed to fayth, the other part to woꝝkes in the iustification of man, two absurdities should followe thereof: one that the promise should be made vncertaine which ought to be certaine. Another, that the satisfaction of Christ could not suffice, except it were stablished by our woꝝkes. Wherefore we embrace the saying of Augustine, which sayth: It is grace in no poynt, except it be free in all poyntes. But the occasion of the error of the Papistes was a Philosophicall imagination, which knoweth no righteousnesse except it be a certayne qualitie in vs. For it vnderstandeth not that a man may be iustified by the imputation of the righteousnesse of another.

Two kinde of righteousnesse

The error concerning iustification by fayth and woꝝkes togither, from whence it proceeded.

The thirde error in the doctrine of iustification confuted.

Nowe let vs come to essentiall righteousnesse, concerning which first it is to be vnderstand, that we are in no wise righteous before God by essentiall righteousnes of God, but in respect of the principall efficient cause. For the formal righteousnesse, by which we are righteous before

I.ii.

God,

e  
 fiel. And  
 we shal no  
 as are of  
 agayne: If  
 without a  
 false, which  
 are iust by  
 that good  
 iustification,  
 es, neyther  
 and James,  
 by woꝝkes,  
 out fault be  
 that men are  
 by woꝝkes  
 somewhat  
 righteousnesse  
 do, doth con  
 ue that fayth  
 phes the per  
 ureth by these  
 they haue the  
 for they being  
 about to sta  
 mitted them  
 is the ende of  
 at beleueth  
 the casting of  
 alone righ  
 which is by  
 me forme of  
 us: If it be  
 we no more  
 or else were  
 done the  
 contrarie



cap 2 vj 26

# A Commentarie vpon the

God, is no other than the obedience of Christ, as Paule plainly teacheth Rom. 5. By the obedience of one, many shall be made righteous. But the obedience of Christ is of two sortes, of the crosse, and of the lawe. By the obedience of the crosse (whereby he humbled himselfe, and became obedient vnto the death, euen the death of the crosse. Philip. 3.) the Lorde doth make a full satisfaction for our sinne. The obedience of the lawe he imputeth vnto vs that beleue, that by it we maye appeare righteous in the sight of God. Paule sayth that this righteousnesse or obedience of Christ is imputed to them that beleue, therefore it is neyther substance nor qualitie abyding in them, whereby a man is made righteous formally. Wherefore this affirmance is surely to be helde, that christian righteousness is the obedience of the sonne of God imputed to him that beleueth. But in the meane season we must also vnderstande this, that the Scripture maketh mention of thre kindes of righteousnesse of man, whereof one is of fayth, by which we stande before God, and this is perfect, as the obedience of Christ is perfect, neyther is it diminished or increased by the diminishing or increasing of fayth. If the Publicane had this full and perfect as well as Peter, although the fayth of Peter was much more manifest and knowne. Another is the beginning of obedience, which is also called the righteousnesse of a good conscience. This is not set agaynst the wrath of God, because it is not perfect obedience of the lawe, yet it is necessary, in as much as it is the proper fruite of fayth. Another there is, which is as yet looked for, whereof Paule speaketh Galat. 5. For we through the spirite wayte for the hope of righteousnesse through fayth. And 1. Iohn. 3. Dearly beloued, nowe are we the sonnes of God, but yet it doth not appeare what we shall be: and we knowe that when we shall appeare, we shall be like him: for we shall see him as he is: and euery man that hath this hope in him, purgeth himselfe

euen

The obedience of Christ is double.

Christian righteousness.

Three kindes of righteousness of man.

Perfect righteousness in this lyfe.

Vnperfect righteousness.

Righteousnes perfect and absolute in the lyfe to come.



Epistle of S. James.

even as he is pure . This righteousnesse therefore is a making of vs lyke vnto God, a dwelling of God in vs, a full fruition of God, an absolute and perfect loue . And although we must confesse, that the heartes of them that beleeue are the temples of the holy ghost, and Chyrist sayth Iohn. 14. If any man loue me, he will keepe my worde, and my father will loue him, and we will come vnto him, and will dwell with him : yet it doth not followe that this dwelling of God in vs is the righteousnesse whereby we stande before God, but it is a diuine presence in vs, by which we are reuued, doe seele comfort, and begyn to appoach to eternall life . Furthemore, if men were iustified here by essentiall righteousnesse, there shoulde be no difference betweene the righteousnesse by which we are righteous in this lyfe, and that by which we shall be like vnto God in all eternitie . But Paule putteth a manifest difference betweene these two . For he sayth that we haue the righteousnesse of sayth, nowe here in this lyfe, but that we doe looke for another righteousnesse, which Iohn defineth to be a framing or fashioning, whereby we shall be fashioned lyke vnto God, which fashioning shall procede from hence, in that we shall see him as he is . Newe obedience is necessarily ioyned with sayth . For regeneration, which cannot be absent from a iustifying sayth, doth necessarily bring forth it frutes which are seene in newe obedience . For after that a man throughe the grace of regeneration is made a newe tree, he ought to bring forth newe, that is, good frutes, which Paule in his Epistle to the Philip. calleth the frutes of y righteousnes of sayth . James pronounceth in his own peculiar and proper phrase that men are iustified by the same, that is, acknowledged and declared iust. This newe obedience is sometime called sanctification, which consisteth of the mortifying of the fleshe, and of the quickening of the spirit. For Paule sayth thus: Christ is made vnto vs wisdom, and righteousnesse, and

Newe obedience doth necessarily accompanye faith.

1. Cor. 1. 30.

I.iii.

sancti-

is Paule  
any shall  
is of two  
obedience  
, and be  
the crosse.  
facion for  
pachy vnto  
righteous in  
eousnesse or  
cleue, ther  
ng in them,  
Therefore  
stiar right-  
imputed to  
we must also  
mention of  
of one is of  
is is perfect,  
it is it dimi-  
increasing of  
fect as well  
much more  
ning of obe-  
e of a good  
of God, be-  
yet it is ne-  
f sayth. An  
reat Paule  
ayre for the  
Ihn. 3. Desir-  
it doth not  
uen we shall  
we as he is:  
to him selfe  
en



cap 2 *26*

## A Commentarie vpon the

Howe Christ  
is made our  
wisedome,  
righteousnes,  
sanctification.  
&c.

sanctification, and redemption. He is made our wisedome in the preaching of the Gospell. He is made our righteousness by the attonement for sinne, and imputation of righteousness. He is made our sanctification, when he giueth vs the holy ghost, which doth after a sort turne our nature, and make it, that the olde man being by little and little mortified, we maye liue after the spirite, that is, we may giue our myndes to godlynesse towarde God, charitie towarde our neyghbour, to holynesse of lyfe, and diligence in our vocation, bryefly, that we maye submit our selues wholly to the rule of the spirit. In what man soeuer the force and vertue of this regeneration, or of this sanctification is not felt, there of necessitie fayth cannot be. For a true and a right fayth is feruent in spirite, and endeuoureth to bring forth it true fruites, and desireth nothing moze than to serue God in spirit, and to abounde in all knowledge and vnderstanding. Seing that this is in very deepe the propertie of a iustifying fayth and of regeneration: who can beare or abyde the saying of them, which with all their might in words and writings do impugne the necessitie of good workes: which truly we say are necessary, not as merits and causes of saluation. For the saying of Paul is firme and vnmouable. *Ephe. 2. By grace are ye saued through fayth, and that not of your selues, it is the gift of God, not of woorkes, least any man shoulde boast himselfe: but as necessarilye accompanying a iustifying fayth, and as the effectes of the spirite which doth regenerate vs. Furthermore, that the reason and maner of good workes may be the better vnderstande, I will declare in order sixe questions concerning good workes. The questions are these. The first, what workes are to be taught, and to be done. The seconde, howe they maye be done. The thirde, howe they doe please. The fourth, what are the causes of good workes. The fift, why promises are added to good workes. The sixt, bicause all men haue sinne,*

Howe good  
workes are  
necessarie to  
saluation.

Sixe questions  
to be handled  
concerning  
good workes.



capo 2 ff 25  
Epistle of S. James. 32

it is not without cause demaunded, whose obedience doth please, and whose doth not please. When it is enquired what workes are to be taught and done, two thinges are to be weyed of vs, whoe we be, and whome he is vnto whom obedience is to be giuen by workes. When we beholde our selues considering our owne corruption, we are admonished that we our selues doe not imagine workes by which we thinke to worship God. For by our selues we do not vnderstand, what eyther pleaseth or displeaseth God, and the Lorde pronounceth that he is worshipped in bayne with the commaundements of men: Let vs therefore certaynly thinke that workes, albeit fayre and goodly, which haue bene inuented of men, are in no wise good.

But if we consider God, we are admonished of reuerence toward him, whereby it commeth to passe that we thinke that that onely pleaseth him, which he prescribeth in his word. For he onely is our law giuer. *Ezechiel comprehendeth both in chap. 20. walke ye not in the ordinances of your fathers, neyther obserue their maners, nor defile your selues with their Idols, I am the Lord your God: walke in my statutes, and keepe my iudgements and doe them. Also, 33. I haue made thee a watchman vnto the house of Israel: therefore thou shalt heare the word at my mouth, and admonish them from me.* Hereof therefore it manifestly followeth that no other workes are to be taught and done but those which are commended vnto vs by the word of God.

After that the mind of the godly man knoweth, what workes are to be done forth with, it inquireth how they may be done. The dissoluing of this question is to be taken out of two sayings of the Scripture. The Apostle sayth to the *Hebr.* without fayth it is vnpossible to please God. And *Christ* sayth: without me can ye doe nothing. Wherefore these thinges are required in order. First, the knowledge of *Christ*. Secondly trust and confidence in

I.iii.

Christ.

The first question what good workes are to be taught and done.

Such workes are to be taught and done, as God hath commended to vs in his worde.

The seconde question.

Howe those workes which God hath prescribed, may be done. *Heb. 11. 6. Iohn. 15. 5.*



cap. 2 of 26

## A Commentarie vpon the

Christ. Thirdly diuification, whereby Christ doth quicken vs by the Gospell, and poureth his holy spirite vpon vs. Herevnto maketh y<sup>e</sup> saying of *Esay, chap. 40.* But they that wait vpon the Lord shall renue their strength: they shall lift vp the wings as the Egles: they shall runne, and not be wearie, and they shall walke and not faint. For there can be no loue, no obedience, except mercy and reconciliation for the mediators sake be first apprehended. In this consolation the diuinitie doth dwell in the heart. For the eternall father is effectually in deedz by his sonne which comforteth by the voyce of the Gospell, and the holye Ghost is giuen of the father and the Sonne which stirreth vp in vs ioye and calling vpon God, according to these sayings: I will poure vpon them the spirite of grace and compassion, &c. And in *John: We will come vnto him and dwel with him. 2. Cor. 3.* We beholding the glory of the Lord with open face, are changed into the same image, that is, we beholding the word which is the image of the eternall father, and in consolatio doth shew the presence and goodness of God, are made like vnto his image, the holy Ghost inflaming our hearts.

Zach. 12. 10.  
Iohn. 14. 23.

The third  
question how  
good workes  
which are  
done of vs do  
please God.

After that the mind is taught how good workes may be done, it inquireth furthermore how they please, for they are done in vayne, except they please. *Scipio* fighteth for his countrey, *Dauid* also fighteth, but the workes of both of them doe not please God. It is fitly therefore demanded, how good workes may please. To the which question we aunswere in generall, that they please in the regenerate. The workes of *Scipio* did not please because he was not regenerate. But the warfare of *Dauid* did please because *Dauid* was accepted by fayth. But here are three thinges to be considered in order. First we must certainly thinke concerning the person, that he is reconciled by fayth and iust for Christes sake freely. Then we must conclude that the person iustified by fayth, cannot as yet satisfie



Copy 2 of 20

Epistle of S. James. 33

istie the lawe . For many inward sinnes doe abide and  
sticke euen in the Godly. This uncleanesse is to be la-  
mented and doubts and euil affections are to be resisted  
and striden against, and also we ought to pray with true  
sighes of the heart, that God will not impute vnto vs this  
filchines wherein we are wrapped. Thirdly, although we  
acknowledge this our filchines, notwithstanding we must  
certaynly thinke that God doth require a certayne vnper-  
fect obedience in vs, & that this vnperfect obedience doth  
please for Christs sake. For so Peter doth playnly teach :  
Offer vp spirituall sacrifices acceptable to God by Iesus  
Christ, which is our reconciliation and now maketh interces-  
sion for vs. Our obedience therefore doth not please God  
for the worthines or perfection thereof. For by it selfe it  
is vnworthy to come into the sight of God, neyther doth  
it fulfill the law, as it is sayd, but it pleaseth bicause of the  
person reconciled, which for Christs sake is counted righ-  
teous : so also doth he please, although he carie about in  
the flesh sinne and great infirmitie. Seing it is euident  
that a man is in no wise iustified by workes : it may fit-  
ly also may be demaunded, what are the causes of good  
workes by which men ought to be stirred by and pricked  
forward to worke well. There are numbrd thre moost  
weyghty causes, necessitie, dignitie, and reward.

Necessitie may be made to be of fīue sortz : of h̄ cōmān-  
demēt, of worshop, of det, of holding fast h̄ sayth, of auoy-  
ding punishmēt, & of cōuersion or regeneratiō. Necessitie  
of the commaudemēt is, bicause God doth seriously and  
seuerely commaund obedience toward his lawe. Keepe  
mine ordinances sayth he, and walke therein, & Paul sayth :  
This is the will of God euen your sanctification. Necessitie  
of dette or dutie that we owe is declared Rom. 8. We are  
debtors not to the flesh but to the spirite, for we are not our  
owne, but his that hath redemed vs with his blood. Necessi-  
tie of holding fast the sayth is commaunded to vs of

R. i. Paule:

How our obe-  
dience plea-  
seth God.

Three speciall  
causes which  
ought to  
moue vs to  
doe good  
workes.

Fīue kindes  
of necessitie  
which oughte  
much to stirre  
vs vp vnto  
the doing of  
good workes.

Leuit. 18. 4.  
1. Thess. 4. 3.

quicker  
upon vs.  
they shall  
me, and not  
there can  
conciliation  
In this con-  
For the es-  
sone which  
and the holpe  
which directly  
in to these  
of grace and  
vnto him and  
of the Lord  
age, that is,  
the eternall  
nce and good-  
the holy Ghost  
workes may be  
ale, for they  
in sight of  
workes of both  
foze deman-  
which question  
in the regene-  
cause he was  
did please bi-  
ere are thre  
ust certaynly  
reconciled by  
we must con-  
at as per sa-  
criste



## A Commentarie vpon the

1. Timo. 5. 8.

1. Timo. 1. 18.  
19.

Ezech. 33. 11.

The second  
speciall cause  
which ought  
to moue vs to  
worke well.

Iohn. 1. 12.

2. Pet. 1. 16.

The third spe-  
ciall cause  
which ought  
to stirre vs vp  
to good  
workes.

Paule. If there be any that prouideth not for his owne, and namely for them of his housholde, he denieth the fayth, and is worse than an infidel. And agayne: Fight a good fight, hauing fayth and a good conscience, neyther of which is kept while we giue our selues to sinne. Necessitie of a uoyding punishment is confirmed by the testimonie of Dauid. For iniquitie, sayth he, thou doest chastice the children of men. Necessitie of conuersion is affirmed in this saying: As I liue, sayth the Lord God, I desire not the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turne from his waye and liue. When therefoze conuersion is made, man is also quickened by fayth through the holy Ghost. Moreouer, vnto conuersion is ioined regeneration, which is a beginning of a newe lyfe, a newe light, wisdom, righteousnesse, and a reuening of the image of God in vs.

The seconde cause is dignitie, which consisteth in this, that the man conuerted or regenerate, is nowe the sonne of God, according to that saying: He gaue power to be the sonnes of God to them that beleue in his name. Howe great a dignitie is it, that they which beleue, are the temple of the holy ghost liuing: that Christ dwelleth in them by fayth: that the Father, the Sonne, and the holy Ghost, doe come vnto them, and will dwell with them: that they are the members of Christ. On the contrarie, wey what a wickednes it is for the children of God to resemble the image of the enimie: howe great a daunger it is, that the temple of God shoulde be polluted with the filthinesse of Satan, what a cruell thing it is to driue God out of his dwelling place. Wherefoze it becommeth the children of God to unicate their heauenly father, which sayth: Be ye holy, for I am holy. Herevpon Paule sayeth that we are called to sanctification, and not to uncleannes.

The thirde cause is a rewarde, that is, a recompence of the pacience and obedience of them that beleue. This rewarde is not giuen for the worthinesse of the worke, but for



copy 2 of 25

Epistle of S. James. 34

for the promise of grace. Seeing that the good workes that are done of the godly, are the bounden duties of seruants, and vnperfect and defiled: it may be demaunded why God hath added promises to good workes. And there may be numbred fīue causes hereof. The first, that they may be testimonies of the prouidence of God. For God will haue it knowne that good things per taining to the bodye, are created of him, and are not spreade abroade by chaunce, but are of him giuen to the Church, and preserued according to the saying: *He is thy life and the length of thy dayes, in the dayes of hunger they shall be satisfied, the rich haue suffred hunger, but no good thing shall be wanting to him that feareth the Lorde.* The seconde, that they may be testimonies, that God will, yea euen in this lyfe keepe and preserue his Church. Wherefore Paule sayth *I. Tim. 4. Godlynesse hath the promise of the lyfe present, and of that that is to come.* Bicause God will of his infinite goodnesse gather his Church for his sonnes sake the mediatour, he keepeth this order of nature, he maketh the earth fruitefull, that he may seede and nourishe his Church euen in this life, and bicause for his Churches sake he doth feede also the rest, it becommeth vs especially to be thankful. The thirde, bicause God will haue corporall necessitie to be a monishment & warning concerning fayth, prayer, hope, giuing of thankes: therefore hath he set forth his promises, & wil haue these good things to be asked & looked for by fayth, & by this asking and looking for he will haue fayth, hope and pacience to increase. The fourth, that they may be warnings of the promise of grace, bicause that fayth which acknowledgeth the sonne, and receyueth reconciliation, ought alwayes to go before in the asking of corporall things, and for the sonnes sake the other promises were set forth and ratified. All these things are comprehended in the saying: *Whatsoeuer he shall aske the father in my name, he will giue it you.* The fift, bicause God

Five causes wherefore God hath added promises to good workes.

The first.

The seconde.

The thirde.

The fourth.

Ioh. 15. 16.

The fift.

Will

will

vne, and  
 sayth, and  
 good fight,  
 which is  
 cessitie of a  
 estimonie of  
 lice the chil-  
 rmed in this  
 not the death  
 his eye and  
 man is also  
 Forouer, but  
 a beginning  
 oulesse, and  
  
 uth in this,  
 ue the sonne  
 e power to be  
 name. Howe  
 reue, are the  
 dwelleth in  
 and the holy  
 ll with them  
 he contrarie,  
 e God to re-  
 a danger it  
 ted with the  
 to vme God  
 commeth the  
 ether, which  
 Paule sayeth  
 unclesannes.  
 mpence of  
 e. This re-  
 ayth, but  
 for



cap 2 of 26

## A Commentarie vpon the

will haue both these things to be knowne, both that the Church is subiect to the crosse, and yet notwithstanding that it is marueylously preferred in this lyfe, euen among perills and daungers, that all the maruaylous preferuations of the Church, and al the wonderfull deliuerances of the same, may be testimonies of the presence of God in his Church, as it is sayde Num. 14. *That the Egyptians maye knowe, that thou, O Lorde art among this people.* Iosu. 3. *Ye shall knowe that the Lorde God is in the midst of you.* I. Kings. 17. *That all the earth may knowe, that there is a God in Israel.* Esay. 37. *Nowe O Lorde our God, saue thou vs out of the hande of Zenacherib, that all the kingdomes of the earth may knowe, that thou onely art the Lorde.* Seeing that al men haue sinne, it is rightly demaunded, whose obedience doth please, and whose doth not please. To this question I doe aunswere thus: Sinnes are of two sorts: Some are committed of them which know and are willing agaynst their conscience, such sinnes are not in them that beleue. For if he that beleueth, doth fall agaynst his conscience, he doth as it were shake of the holy ghost, renounce the fayth, and is made guiltie of the wraoth of God, and except he repenteth, he falleth headlong into eternal punishment. Moreover they, which being deceyued by the delusions of the deuill, doe reuolt from the foundation, that is, doe renounce and forsake any article of the fayth, whether they vnderstande it, or vnderstande it not, doe cease to be holy, doe shake of the holy ghost, and become guiltie of eternal wraoth and displeasure, as *Cherintus, Ebion, Arius, Fotinus,* and such lyke heretikes. Other some sinnes are not committed agaynst the conscience, as blindnesse, and ignorance, doubting, many omittings of our dutie, and vicious affections, agaynst which euilles the godlye doe strue, and doe beleue that they are put away for the mediators sake. Although this vnclannesse is in the godly, yet they doe please God for the mediators sake, receiuing  
by

Two generall  
forts of sinnes

What followeth  
sinne agaynst  
the conscience.

The sinnes of  
the godly.



cap 3. 35

Epistle of S. James. 35

by fayth forgiuenesse of their sinnes, according to that say-  
yng : Blessed are they whose sinnes are covered. And Paule Psal. 32.1.  
sayth : If ye mortifye the deedes of the flesh by the spirite, Rom. 8.13.  
ye shall liue. These things I thought good to speake moze  
at large concerning true and wholesome repentance, and  
the partes thereof, that the maner of true repentance or  
turning vnto God, may be plainly vnderstande of euery  
one, and the order of the partes of repentance may be con-  
sidered, that that which is proper to euery of them may be  
giuen vnto it, that we doe not confounde the properties of  
the partes, that we may vnderstande that iustification and  
saluation is free, that we may not deprive fayth of it pro-  
perties. Briefly, that we being iustified by fayth freely for  
Christes sake, may giue to God his glorie and worship,  
and exercise our selues in all kindes of good works whiles  
that we shall be straungers in this lyfe, which a full and  
perfite redemption through Christ our only sauour shall  
follow, to whome be prayse for euer. Amen.

Chap. 3.

The summe of the thirde

Chapter.

AS he perswadeth that none doe rashly vsurpe vnto him  
selfe authoritie of maistership & government, but ra-  
ther that he bridle his owne togue: so he requireth that wise-  
dome be shewed by modest conuersation, rather than by con-  
tention and enuie, whereof many mischiefes doe come.

The order and partes of the  
thirde Chapter.

THEre are two partes of this Chapter : the first concer-  
ning maistership not to be rashly vsurped ouer other, but  
rather that the tongue is to be bridled. The second of the vse  
of wisdom and giftes without enuie and contention. Either  
part hath it reasons by which it is proued.

K.iii.

The

that the  
standing  
among  
preferre  
erances of  
God in his  
ians maye  
Iosu. 3. Ye  
debt of you.  
there is a  
same thou  
kingdome  
Lorde. See  
ued, whole  
is. To this  
two sortis :  
are willing  
them that  
with his con-  
it renouice  
God, and et-  
mal punish-  
y the delin-  
or, that is,  
h, whether  
ceale to be  
guiltie of e-  
sion, Arins,  
sinnes are  
nesse, and  
uice, and  
poupe doe  
p the me-  
ye godly,  
receiuing  
by



cap 3 7.1

# A Commentarie vpon the

## The exposition of the third

Chapter with an obseruation of the  
Doctrin.

1 My brethren be not many maisters.



The meaning of this proposition considered by it selfe is doubtfull, but if it be restrayned, as it needes must be, to the reasons by which the proposition is confirmed, the meaning is easie. Seeing therefore that all the reasons whiche

are afterwarde added, doe contayne the discommodities of an intemperate tongue, we must of necessitie here take maisters for them, which take vnto them selues authoritie to reforme and censure others, and doe seuerly and rigorously call other mens deedes vnto examination, and in the meane season doe not see there owne faultes.

What the Apostle condemneth in the former words.

We doth not therefore condemne here brotherly admonition, which proceedeth of fayth and loue, which hath the commandement of Christ, and is the foundation of Ecclesiasticall discipline: but he condemneth the lightnes, ambition and pride of them, which doe not so much regarde edifying, as they doe giue them selues to sclauder and backbite. Christ sayth: *Matth. 23. Be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your maister, to wit, Christ, and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father vpon the earth, for there is but one your father which is in heauen. &c.* If any contende vpon these wordes, that it is not lawfull for any godly man to take vpon him the title of maister or teacher: A

The names of maisters and teachers are not taken away by the words of James.

obiect agaynst him the forbidding of the name of a father. For here we are no lesse prohibited to be called fathers then maisters. Therefore as it is not simply forbidden to be called fathers, but in this or that respect: so neither are we simplie forbidden to be called maisters or teachers.

This



copy 3 720

Epistle of S. James. 36

This meaning therfore is to be considered. Christ doth not esteeme by what name or title thou art called, so as thou abidest vnder his gouernment, and maintaynest brotherly concord without ambition and contempt of others. Paule calleth himselfe the maister and teacher of the Gentils, yet he hath not broken this commaundement of Christ, but rather obeyed it. For his maisterhip did tende vnto this ende, that he might bring all vnder the gouernment and rule of Christ. They therfore which eyther vpon the wordes of James or the prohibition of the Lorde doe condemne scholasticall promotions, doe mistake and falsly apply the Scripture, and appayze and diminish the profitable gouernment of a common wealth concerning learning. Let ambition be farre from vs, let vs submit oure selues to the maisterhip and gouernement of Christ, and let vs reuerently retayne and keepe scholasticall order.

Knovving that vve shall receiue the greater condemnation.

The first reason is taken of punishment: they which are ready to condemne others, who notwithstanding them selues, are in the same faultes or greater, doe prouoke the wrath of God agaynst themselues. For seing that loue doth couer a multitude of sinnes, and they are desirous to discouer the sinnes of others, they doe sufficiently declare, that they are voyde of loue.

2 For in many thinges vve sinne all.

The second reason taken of our common imbecillitie and weaknes. For our common infirmitie and readines to sin ought to admonish vs that we be not ouer rigoros agaynst others. The chiefe causes of our falling into sinne are these, 1. Sin dwelling or abiding in vs. 2. The manifold craftes and assaultes of the deuil. 3. The examples of the greatest part of the worlde, and those exceeding euill. 4. Negligence of gouernours of maners and discipline, as in parents, ministers of the Gospell and euill rulers.

The greatest causes which moue men to sinne so often as they doe.

K.iiii.

If

in consider  
if it be re-  
be, to the  
on is con-  
Sering  
s which  
modities  
illie here  
selues au-  
me seuerly  
mination,  
me faultes,  
y admoniti-  
ich hath the  
m of Ecclie-  
fenes, am-  
ch regarde  
under and  
alled Rabbi:  
are breshers  
there is but  
y contende  
ary godly  
teacher: A  
of a father.  
ed fathers  
bidden to  
either are  
teachers,  
This



## A Commentarie vpon the

If any man sinne not in vword, he is a perfect man,  
and able to bridle all the body.

The third reason taken of the profite of a bridled tongue.  
He that can temper his tongue is a perfect man, that is  
vpright or entire, and endued with many other vertues.  
Therefore he that doth vse his tongue vnruly and disho-  
nestly is no whit vpright or entire: for he is polluted  
with many vices. Therefore we must not rashly take vn-  
to vs authoritie to iudge and reforme the maners of o-  
thers.

3 Behold vve put bittes into the horses mouthes, that  
they should obey vs, and vve turne about all theyr  
body.

4 Behold also the shippes, vvhich though they be so  
great, and are driuen of fierce vvindes, yet are they  
turned about vvith a very smal rudder, vvhicherso-  
euer the gouernour listeth.

5 Euen so the tongue is a little member, and boa-  
steth of great things.

The tongue  
is compared  
to the bit of a  
bridle, and to  
the rudder of  
a ship.

The fourth reason likewise is taken of the profit and com-  
moditie of a well ordered tongue. For as a bitte put into  
the horses mouth, doth turne about all the body of the  
horse, and as the rudder of a ship doth guide the whole  
ship: so a well ordered tongue boasteth of great things,  
that is, it bringeth to passe great matters, and doth as it  
were direct the whole man into the way of perfection:  
when as contrariwise a disordered and an vnruly tongue  
is like to a bitte that is lewse, and a rudder that is set at  
libertie.

Behold hovv great a thing a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is a fire, yea a vworld of vvickednes:  
so is the tongue set among our members, that it de-  
fileth the vvhole body, and setteth on fire the course  
of nature, and it is set on fire of hel.

The fift reason taken of the discommodities of an vnbrid-  
led



Epistle of S. James.

copy 3

led and an unruly tongue. As, sayth he, a little fire dooth  
with burning consume the whole wood: so the litle tongue  
is as it were the kindling of many vices, which although  
it be but smal, yet it is a world of iniquitie that is, a gathe-  
ring together or an heape of all wickednes, as therfore in  
a little fire there is powre to kindle the whole wood: so  
in the small tongue, there is power to defile the whole bo-  
dy of man, and to set on fire the course of nature, when as  
it selfe is first set on fire of hell. But what is the course of  
nature, and what is it for the tongue to be set on fire of  
hell? As the course of nature is the world it selfe: so the  
tongue to be set on fire of hell is as much, as to be breathed  
vpon of Satan himselfe, wherby it is made a fit instru-  
ment to stirre by all mischief in the worlde. Hercunto  
may be referred that saying of Menander: the tongue is  
the cause of many euills. How true this is the tongue of  
Mahomet and other heretikes doth witness.

The discom-  
modities  
which arise of  
an unruly and  
an vntempe-  
rate tongue.

7 For the vvhole nature of beastes and of birdes, and  
of creeping thinges, and thinges of the sea is tamed  
and hath bene tamed of the nature of man:

8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an unruly euil  
The sixt reason taken from a comparison: beastes bydes,  
and fishes of the sea may be tamed, but the tongue that is  
unbrideled and accustomed to speak ill, can by no meanes  
be tamed. It is therfore an exceeding great euill. Where-  
fore we must most diligently take heede, that we doe not  
giue it to much libertie.

A hard thing  
to rule the  
tongue, and  
therefore it  
must be brid-  
led in time.

Full of deadly poyson.

9 Therevwith blesse vve God euen the father, & there-  
vwith curse vve men, vvhich are made after the simi-  
litude of God.

10 Out of one mouth procedeth blessing and cursing.  
The seuenth reason taken of the wonderfull inconstancie  
of the venimous tongue. For it sayneth y it blesseth God,  
and by and by it curseth him in his image, then which

L. i.

wicked



comp 3

## A Commentarie vpon the

wickednes what can be greater :

My brethren, these things ought not so to be.

The eyght reason taken of an inconuenience : this disorder of the tongue and reprochfull speaking doth not become Christians, wherefore it is especially to be auoyded:

11 Doth a fountaine sende forth at one place swete water and bitter ?

12 Can the fig tree, my brethren, bring forth oliues, eyther a vyne figges ? so can no fountayne make both salt water and swete.

The ninth reason taken of that which is vnpossible. As it is vnpossible that a fountayne should be able to sende forth at one place swete water and bitter. For that can no more be, than that a figge tree should be able to bring forth oliues, or a vine figges : so it can not be, that that tongue which is giuen to euil speaking and sclaudering, should be able to bring forth any good thing not defiled w the venim of the tongue & the heart. Wherefore seing that it is so, let euery one applie his tongue only to speak well, which will be counted godly & among the children of God. Wherefore let no man rashly vsurpe vnto himselfe authoritie to controll a nd finde fault with others.

13 VVho is a vwise man, and endued vvith knowvledge among you ? let him shevve by good conuersation his vvorkes, in meekenesse of vvisedom.

Hitherto he hath beaten downe the statelynesse of proude controllers of other, and hath with firme reasons brydled the virulinesse and saucinesse of the tongue. Now bicause this euill did proceede of an opinion of wisedome, he commendeth the true moderation of wisedome, and teacheth the vse thereof in our lyfe and conuersation. The proposition is this : He that is endued with true wisedome and knowledge, let him shewe it by the workes of an honest and meeke conuersation, as by the true and continuall frutes

vnpossible it is for a tongue accustomed to speake yll, to vtter that which is good & vndealed.

True vvifdom will shewe it selfe by honest conuersation.



cap 3

fruites thereof.

14 But if ye haue bitter enuying and strife in your heartes, reioyce not, neyther be lyers agaynst the truth.

The first reason of the proposition taken of disagreeing or contrarie effects. He which is full of bitter enuying & contention, doth boast in bayne that he is a wise man. For these wicked affections are contrarie to the nature of true wisdom, which loueth honestie and meekenesse. To be a lyer agaynst the truth in this place, is falsly to vsurpe vnto himselfe the name of wisdom.

A man cannot be full of enuy and strife, and also wise.

15 This wisdom descendeth not from aboue, but is earthly, sensuall, and deuilish.

The seconde reason of contrarie causes. Wisdom wherewith bitternesse of mynde, and desire of contention are ioyned, is earthly, sensuall, and deuilish: Therefore it is not true wisdom. For true wisdom is heauenly, spirituall, and diuine. James in this place doth not condemne naturall wisdom, which is the good gyft of God by it selfe, whereof he maketh here no mention, but he condemneth the wicked affections of men, and the bayne boasting of diuine wisdom.

Contention and true wisdom can not stand together.

16 For vwhere enuying and strife is, there is sedition, and all maner of euill vworkes.

The thirde reason of the discommoditie of enuy and contention, which followe a bayne opinion of wisdom. Experience doth sufficiently proue, that when men are full of bitter enuie, and desirous of contention, the gate is open to them vnto sedition and all wickednes, wherof Germanie being afflicted at this day, hath to much experience.

Enuie & strife open the gate to sedition & wickednesse.

17 But the wisdom that is from aboue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to be entreated, full of mercie and good fruites, without iudging, and without hypocrisie.

The fourth reason taken of things annexed or ioyned vnto



cap 3

An excellent  
comparing  
together of  
earthly and  
heavenly wis-  
dom, wherein  
is shewed  
howe the one  
differeth from  
the other,

*A Commentarie vpon the*  
to true and heavenly wisdom. Which things we will  
Declare by setting one contrarie agaynst the other. Earthly  
wisdom is corrupted with affections: heavenly wise-  
dome is pure, vndefiled, and not polluted with affections.  
Earthly wisdom is desirous of cōtention: heavenly wise-  
dome is peaceable, that is, diligent to make peace and  
quietnesse among men. Earthly wisdom is rigorous  
and cruell: heavenly wisdom is gentle, and giueth place  
to rigour. Earthly wisdom will yeelde to no man: hea-  
venly wisdom is tractable, and doth easily obey him that  
commaundeth those things that be good and right. Earthly  
wisdom is vnmmercifull: heavenly wisdom is merci-  
full, and full of good frutes. Earthly wisdom doth ac-  
cept persons omitting the cause: heavenly wisdom doth  
in no case regarde the persons, but the causes. Earthly  
wisdom hath hypocrisie toynd with it: heavenly wise-  
dome is voyde of all hypocrisie.

18 And the fruite of righteousness is sown in peace, of  
them that make peace.

The vse of  
wisdom and  
all other good  
gifts receyued  
of God.

The first reason taken of the fruite, which commeth vnto  
them that vse wisdom and other giftes of God peaceably  
vnto edifying, also he teacheth a generall rule concerning  
the vse, not only of wisdom, but also of other giftes. For  
he will haue vs vse both wisdom and other giftes as the  
frutes of righteousness peaceably vnto edifying, which  
if we shall doe, we shall at the length ioyfully reape the  
frutes of our righteousness.

### Chap 4.

### The summe of the fourth

#### Chapter.

*AS* the Apostle exhorteth them, that vnlawfull lustes  
from whence contentions doe come, and humane de-  
sires being excluded, they doe cleave vnto God, and liue ra-  
ther



chap 4

**Epistle of S. James. 39**

ther in mourning thē in the vaine ioy of the world: so he doth earnestly admonish them, that laying asyde backbiting and speaking euill one of another, they presume to doe nothing rashly.

The order and partes of the  
fourth Chapter.

**A**lthough the scope and drift of this Chapter is one, that the faythfull doe not any thing conetously, deceitfully and rashly, following their owne lustes and desires, yet I make foure partes hereof, that the first may be a sharpe debortation from the desire of priuate things thowrow lustes and concupiscence, from whence many mischiefs doe spring, wherunto is added a confirmation. In the second is set forth counsayle or remedie agaynst the fire of lustes. The thirde is a dissuasion from the desire of backbiting and condemning other. The fourth is a correction of rasbe presumption in the purposing and doing of things.

The fourth  
Chapter consisteth of four  
Partes.

**The exposition of the fourth**

Chapter with an obseruation of the  
Doctrin.

1 From vvhence are vvarres and contentions among you? are they not hence, euen of your pleasures that fight in your members?



**C**heweth that the lustes of the minde are the fountayne of all contention and mischiefe among men, by the which men are caried to desire those thinges which they iudge acceptable and pleasaunt vnto them selues. When he sayth that pleasures doe fight in the members, he hath relation to the kingdome of originall sinne, which is sayde of the Apostle Paul then to reigne, when we doe obey it through the lustes thereof, which are as it were certayne souldiers of it. These he sayth, doe fight in the members, bicause the members of

How men are  
led to sinne  
through the  
lustes of their  
own mindes.

L.iii.

the



## A Commentarie vpon the

the body are instruments by the which sinne that dwelleth in vs, doth finish it worke, and which allso men doe vse to commit wickednes. The summe of the whole matter is this: The fountayne of concupiscence is originall sinne, passiue concupiscence which is unwilling is stirred by and prouoked of originall sinne, and that by the ministerie eyther of the sense or of the complexion, or of the memoire. The will is moued to consent, whereof ariseth actiue concupiscence which is willing. To this now bearing rule the members of the body are obedient, and doe prepare them selues to doe the worke, which when it is done, originall sinne is sayde to reigne and concupiscence to fight, obeying the tyranne sinne, and vsing the members of the body as instruments in their fight. But that this be not done Paule forbiddeth when he sayth. *Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortall bodie, that ye should obey it in the lustes thereof.*

Rom. 6. 12.

2 Ye lust and haue not, ye enuie and desire immoderately, and cannot obtayne: ye fight and vvarre and get nothing, because ye aske not.

3 Ye aske and receiue not, bicause ye aske amisse, that ye might laye the same out on your pleasures.

The inordinate carefulness of covetous men described.

He liuely describeth the wicked motions and trauayle of them, which endeuour greedily to increase their substance, that they may prouide for their pleasures. They lust after those things that are other mens, they enuie them which haue, they desire immoderately, that is, they doe maruelously couet, and are vehemently caried, they doe earnestly followe contentions, that by right and wrong they may obtayne those things which they desire. Sometime also they call vpon God by prayer, but in vayne, bicause they aske amisse, euen those things which woulde turne to their owne destruction if they shoulde receyue them. We see howe aptly he doth here describe the carefulnesse of covetous men in doing their businesse.

¶ Ye



Epistle of S. James.

4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the amitie of the world is the enimitie of God? VVho soeuer therefore vvill be a friende of the world, maketh himselfe the enimie of God.

The first reason of the proposition whereby he confuteth the peruerse opinion of them, which woulde both be godly, and also followe the pleasures of this worlde: but he sheweth that it is vnpossible for that to be. For one thing pleaseth God, another thing pleaseth the worlde, and God and the worlde doe commaunde things cleane contrarie. Seing therefore that euery one must be eyther a friende of the worlde and an enimie of God, or a friende of God, and an enimie of the worlde, it is meete that euery one, which desireth to be a Christian, doe renounce the friendship of the worlde, that is, the wicked lustes therof, and cleaue vnto God, and obey him. This place agreeth with that saying of Christ: No man can serue two maisters. Hereof it is manifest, that many at this daye doe boast of the name of Christians, which in deede are prophane enemies of God, and abhominable befoze God. They professe that they knowe God, but by workes they denie him, and are abhominable and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke reprobate. Finally he calleth here adulterers and adulteresses forsakers of God, in as much as they leauing God, to whome they ought to cleaue as vnto a husbände, doe ioyne themselues vnto other louers.

VVe can not serue two maisters, we can not please both God and the worlde.

Math. 6. 24

Spirituall adulterers.

5 Doe ye thinke that the Scripture saith in vayne: The spirit that dwelleth in vs lusteth after enuie?

He proueth that friendshippe cannot stande betweene the worlde and God, and that by the testimonie of the Scripture, which testimonie, although in these wordes it is not founde in the Bibles, yet as much as appertayneth to the sense thereof, it commeth very often. For it agreeth with that saying, Genes. 6. God sawe that all the imaginations of the thoughtes of mans heart were onely euill continuallye.

Liiii. And

dwelleth  
doe use to  
a matter is  
small time,  
is stirred by  
the ministerie  
of memorie,  
which acitue  
the bearing  
and doe pre-  
sent it is done,  
impudence to  
the members  
that this be  
Let not some  
should obey it  
are immode-  
d vrate and  
aske amitie,  
or pleasures.  
to tramaple of  
eir substance,  
they lust after  
them which  
y doe maruel  
y doe earnestly  
ong they may  
meetime also  
because they  
side turne to  
them. We  
Inesse of co

4 Ye



Cap 4

## A Commentarie vpon the

The heart and thoughts of the vnregenerate are euill continually.

And with that Genes. 8. The imagination of mans heart is euill, euen from his youth. By these testimonies is signified, that men which are not regenerate, are caried headlong vnto euill, which seing it is contrarie to God, who is most gracious and good, who doth both will and also thinke those thinges that be good: it cannot otherwise be, but that there should be a certayne enimitie of the world and of God.

6 But the Scripture offereth more grace and therefore sayth: God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble.

To whome God giueth his grace.

The second reason is taken of a reward. God hath promised to the humble, that is to the poore in spirite, and to them that despise the vaine lustes of the world, grace, which is better then all the delites and riches of the world. Let Christians therefore seeke this rather, then that fauour of the world and the pleasures thereof, which the proude doe diligently seeke after. But as he giueth grace to the humble: so he resisteth the proude as a most sore and grieuous enemie.

7 Submit your selues to God: resist the deuill and he vwill flee from you.

What it is to submit himselfe to God. To resist the deuill.

Now he teacheth remedies against the euill of lust or concupiscence. To submit himselfe to God, is to set before himselfe the word of God as a rule of his life, and according to it to submit himselfe in all obedience. To resist the deuill, is to striue agaynst unlawfull lustes, which are the instruments of Satan, by the which he draweth men vnto destruction. To this he addeth a promise: And he vwill flee from you, that is, he will not hurt you, he will not overthrow you with his subleties and delusions.

8 Dravv neare to God, and he vwill dravv neare to you, clense you handes, ye sinners, and purge you heartes, ye double minded.

He commaundeth and promiseth. He commaundeth that we



Epistle of S. James.

cap. 4

We draw neare unto God, to wit, by fayth and true obedi-  
ence. For as he is sayd to depart from God which doth a-  
bandon and giue himsel'e to the lustes of the worlde, by  
which he draweth neare unto the deuill: so he which de-  
parteth from these, is sayd to draw neare unto God. He  
promiseth when he sayth: And he vwill dravv neare vnto  
you. This promise is grounded vpon the continuall loue  
of God towards mankind, whereby he desireth not the  
death of a sinner. He doth here call them sinners, which  
exercise manifest impietie, and them double minded,  
which sayde in wordes, that they did worship God, and in  
the meane season did follow their owne lusts and concupi-  
scent.

VWho is sayde  
to draw nere  
vnto God and  
who to draw  
nere vnto the  
deud.

9 Suffer afflictions and sorowve ye, and vveepe: Let  
your laughter be turned into mourning, and your  
ioy into heauines.

He setteth this agaynst the pleasures of them, which fol-  
low their owne lustes, and laugh and reioyce in them. For  
it becommeth the godly rather to mourne and suffer af-  
fliction, and so to be ashamed for the sinnes which they  
haue committed, that they cast their countenance downe  
to the earth for shame. For that the greeke word signifi-  
eth, which h' Apostle here vbleth.

VVe must not  
reioyce in our  
owne lustes,  
but be asha-  
med for our  
sinne.

10 Cast downe your selues before the Lorde, and he  
vwill lift you vp.

Bicause the godly are contened and dispised in the worlde,  
the Apostle doth encourage the, & bid them remaine in that  
subiectio, whereby they are subiect to God in true feare: al-  
so he doth comfort the, when he saith, h' it will come to passe  
that God at the length will lift them vp, and wipe away  
the teares from their face. For by the word of lifting vp  
is signified comfort agaynst the sorow of this present  
life, and deliuerance from all the miseries and troubles of  
this life.

Though the  
godly be long  
cast downe,  
yet the Lorde  
at length will  
raise them vp  
and comfort  
them.

11 Speake not euil one of an other, brethren. He that

¶

spea



cap 4

## A Commentarie vpon the

speakeh euill of his brother, or he that condemneth his brother, speakeh euill of the law and condemneth the law: & if thou condemnest the law, thou arte not an obseruer of the law, but a iudge.

We must not be rash to reprove and condemne our brethren.

To condemne the law what it is.

The office of the law

All iudging of our brethren is not condemned of the Apostle

He doth againe repress the intemperance of the tongue in accusing and condemning other, adding a most strong reason taken of the grieuousnes of the deed. No man ought to speake against the law and condemne it. He that speakeh agaynst his brother and condemneth him, speakeh against the law, and condemneth it. Therefore no man ought to speake against his brother and condemne him. The *Minor* or second proposition of the argumēt he proueth, because he that condemneth the law, is not an obseruer of the law, but a iudge. Now, to condemne the law, is to reiect the authoritie thereof, and to challenge vnto himselfe that right which is due to the law, and so to peruert the order of thinges. For it is the office of the lawe to prescribe a rule of life, and to iudge of those thinges that are done. But it is the dutie of man to submit himselfe to the authoritie of the lawe, and to obserue it. But he which doth the contrarie, that is, he that vsurpeth authoritie to iudge and censure others, both with sacrilege chalenge that to himselfe which is proper to the law. James in this place speakeh onely agaynst those, which of a peruerse and corrupt iudgement speake against their brethren, that they may distaine their good name, and get vnto themselves an opinion of holines: he doth not reprehend those which iudge of duetie, so as they follow the authoritie and rule of the law in iudgeing. For he that doth this, is to be sayd not so much to iudge himselfe, as to pronounce the iudgement of God, which we see James here often times to haue done.

12 There is one lawgiuer vvhich is able to saue and to destroy. VVho art thou that iudgest ā other mā? That which is proper vnto God, no man without sacrilege



cap 9

Epistle of S. James.

32

lege can vsturpe vnto himselfe. It is proper vnto God to be a Lawgiuer and a Iudge, which hereby is manifest, because he only hath power to saue and to destroy. Therefore no man can take vpon him selfe this authoritie without sacrilege. James speaketh here also, as I admonished before, of rashe iudgement proceeding from a desire of deprauiing and sclaudering.

Another reason against rash iudgements of their brethren.

13 Go to now ye that say: to day or to morovv vve vwill go into such a citie, and continue there a yere, and buye and sell, and get gaine,

14 (And yet ye cannot tell vvhath shall be to morovv. For vvhath is your life? It is euen a vapour that appeareth for a litle time, and aftervvarde vanisheth avvay)

15 For that ye ought to say: If the Lorde vwill, and, if vve liue, vve vwill do this or that.

This is a correction of rashe presumption in determining vpon things to be done, and he prescribeth two conditions which he requireth in all deliberations. The first is, that we giue place to the will of God, and that we attempt nothing without calling vpon him. The cause of this condition is, for that the will of God ought to be vnto the godly a rule to worke by. The other condition is, that we doe alwayes thinke vpon the fraylenesse of our lyfe, which being it is lyke vnto a vapour that continueth but a small time: he is vnwise, which promisseth vnto himselfe things that are to come and vncertaine: Wherefore we are admonished in this place, that we doe so behaue our selues in all our doings, that we may be ready whensoever we shall depart from hence.

Two necessarie conditions to be obserued in determining and purposing to doe things.

16 But now ye reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euill.

He sheweth fro whence this presumption in doing things doth come, to wit, of an arrogant reioycing, which being it is euill and alwayes to be auoyded: that also which

D.ii.

spzin

in dem-  
and con-  
the lav,  
a iudge,  
the tongue  
off strong  
No man  
De that  
him, spea-  
therefore no  
condemne  
argumēt he  
is not an ob-  
ne the law,  
llenge vnto  
nd so to pre-  
the laue to  
things that  
in himselfe to  
but he which  
authoritie to  
ge chalenge  
ames in this  
of a peruerse  
reioyen, that  
it vnto them  
shew those  
authoritie and  
his, is to be  
conuince the  
often times  
saue and  
ether mā?  
hout sacr-  
lege



cap 5

*A Commentarie vpon the*  
springeth thereof, is not without good cause to be  
chewed.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth howe to do well,  
and doth it not, to him it is sinne.

To sinne of  
will is farre  
more grieuous  
then to sinne  
of ignorance.

The conclusion directly brought in of that which went be-  
fore shoulde be this: No man therefore of a bayne reioy-  
cing ought rashly to purpose with himselfe to doe anye  
thing, as though the euent or falling out thereof did lye in  
his owne handes. But in the place of this conclusion he  
putteth an exaggerating or amplifying of that sin which  
he reprehendeth. He sinneth more grieuouly, which sin-  
neth willingly and knowing thereof, than he which offend-  
eth of ignorance. Wherefore he cannot be excused, which  
knoweth what is to be done, and howe it is to be done, and  
yet doth it not.

### Chap. 5.

### The summe of the fift

#### Chapter.

As he forbiddeth a rashe otte, and giueth counsaile to  
the afflicted, hauing first sharply rebuked the rich, and  
stirred vp the poore vnto patience: so he requireth pardoning  
of one anothers offences, praying one for another, and dili-  
gence in calling backe their brethren from going astray.

The order and partes of the  
fift Chapter.

OF this Chapter there are five partes. The first is a sharpe  
rebuking of the rich. The seconde, an encouraging of the  
poore vnto patience. The third, a forbidding of a rash otte.  
The fourth, an instruction what is to be done in diuers cases.  
The fift, a commendation of mutuall duties.

The



The exposition of the fift  
Chapter, with an obseruation of  
the doctrine.

1 Go to now ye rich men : weepe and howle for  
your miseries that shall come vpon you.



He speaketh not vnto all rich men, but only vnto them, which were vnnmercifull towards the poore, and eyther abused their riches couetously, or else spent them lewdly vpon delites and pleasures. When he biddeth them weepe, he will haue them call to mynde the miseries which in time to come they shall suffer for their crueltie and couetousnesse. In these wordes therfore this proposition is contayned: Let not rich men abuse their riches vnto their owne destruction.

To what rich men the Apostle speaketh

2 Your riches are corrupt, and your garmentes are moth eaten.

3 Your golde and siluer is cankered, and the rust of the shall be a witnesse against you, and shall eate your flesh as it were fire. Ye haue heaped vp treasure for the last dayes.

These wordes of the Apostle containe three things. First, he sheweth by a signe the vnslatiabie couetousnesse of rich men, which had rather that their treasures shoulde be corrupt and perish in their coffers and chestes, than that they woulde bestowe any whit of them to supplie the neede of them that be in miserie. Secondly, he declareth their crueltie towards the poore, whom they ought with their riches to cherishe and helpe. Thirdly, he threatneth punishment vnto them, in as much as they gather vnto them selues the treasure of iniquitie, couetousnesse, and crueltie against the day of wrath, who in time to come shall be so eaten of hell fire, that is, they shall be tormented with everlasting flames, as nowe their treasure is eaten of the rust.

The exceeding couetousnesse of many rich men.

Vngodly rich men at the last shall not escape unpunished.

¶ iii.

4 Behold,



cap. 5. 26

### A Commentarie vpon the

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers vvhich haue reaped your feeldes (vvhich is of you kept back by fraude) crieth, and the cries of them vvhich haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lorde of hostes.

Pay the true labourer his peny for his payne.

He accuseth the vniustice of rich men, denying labourers their due hire, and threatheth punishment vnto them. For by the worde of crying he signifieth, that this iniurie doth as it were sounde in the eares of the Lord, and cal for vengeance.

5 Ye haue liued in pieasure on the earth, and in vvan-tonnesse. Ye haue nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

He reprehendeth the pleasures, lasciuiousnes, and wantonnes, wherein the riche men did delicately pamper vp themselues. He calleth the day appoynted for sumptuous and delicate bankets, the day of slaughter.

6 Ye haue condemned and haue killed the iust, and he hath not resisted you.

This may be referred both vnto crueltie against the poore, whom the rich men are sayde to haue condemned and killed, when as they did not relieue their neede with their abundance, whereof is that saying of *Augustine*: If thou hast not fed, thou hast killed: And also to the rigorous extortion, whereby they haue in iudgementes exacted their debts of their debtors, and haue oppressed them with seruitude that did not pay.

#### *Of riches and contracts or bargaines.*

Seeing that Iames seemeth in this place to deale somewhat hardly agaynst the rich men of this world, it seemeth vnto me a thing worthe the labour to adde something herebnto concerning riches and contractes or bargaines, which serue to increase our substance, and that vnto this ende, that the godly may be admonished, how farre it is lawfull for them to vse such stapes of their life.

For



cap. 5 35

Forasmuch therfore as some godly men doe get riches by the blessing of the Lorde, and also the societie of man cannot want bargaines, it appeareth sufficiently, that neither to haue riches, neyther to bargayne by it selfe is sin. For we must not thinke that the Gospell doth eyther breake the lawfull bonds of humane societie or take away those things which are necessarie to the maintayning of the life of man. But bicause it is often times offended in the getting of riches, likewise in the possession and vse of them, and also many faults are incident in bargaynes: it is needefull that the godly minde be rightly instructed, whereby it may know, both how to get riches without offence to God, how to vse them being gotten, and also how farre it may exercise vsuall bargaines with a good conscience.

Wherefore first of all let this rule of Christe be moste surely kept: *Seeke ye fyrst the kingdome of God and his righteousnes, and other thinges shall be ministred vnto you.* *Matth. 6.* This rule of Christ conteyneth two thinges, to wit, a commaundement of Christ, and a promise toynd with obedience toward the commaundement. The commaundement is: *Seeke fyrst the kingdome of God and his righteousnes.* He which will not obey this commaundement, as he is not partaker of the grace of Christ: so he abideth in the kingdome of sinne, and serueth Satan, to whom euerlasting death is reserued for his stipend. Let therfore obedience toward this commaundement of Christ haue the principall place, that is, let the care of our saluation be first and chiefe. The promise is: *And other thinges shall be ministred vnto you.* This promise will both haue fayth, to wit, that we doe assure our selues that Christe is true, and will haue a care of vs, if we will obey his commaundement: and also it secretly requireth, that euery one by fayth doe diligently in the feare of God those thinges which are agreeable to his calling. Heathenish and pro-

phane

The rule of Christ consisteth of two principall poynts, the first whereof is a commaundement.

The promise annexed to the commaundement.



cap. 5. b 6

## A Commentarie vpon the

phane carefulnes being excluded. For we must not thinke that the promise of Christ doth commend slothfulnes vnto vs. Wherefore let him that is endued with the faith of Christ, know, that it is a part of godlynes, without which fayth cannot be sound, diligently to doe that dutie, to the which euerie man is called. To this pertayneth that saying of the Apostle: *He that provideth not for his owne, & namely for them of his houshold, denieth the fayth, and is worse then an infidel.* The promise therefore of Christ requireth a holy diligence and an earnest labour of euerie man in his calling. But least that any man doth here by and by as it were in the entrie stumble, and doubt whether his calling be lawfull or no: I will briezly touch, what is required to a lawfull calling or function. Two thinges generally are to be considered, to wit, the kind of office, and the execution thereof. Concerning the kinde, this rule is to be obserued. Every office that maketh for the maintayning and furnishing of the states ordained of God, as are, the ciuil state, the state concerning the gouerning of an house, the ecclesiasticall state, is commaunded in the first and fourth commaundement, as the dutie of the ministers of the word, the function of the magistrats, the seruice of them which helpe the magistrate, the care and charge of maisters of households, the occupations of them whose helpe is profitable and necessarie in the states ordained of God, the traffique of Marchants, which bring in profitable marchandice: briezly, all offices which serue eyther for the order of the Church of God, or of an house, or of y<sup>e</sup> common weale, are lawfull in them selues, and also in the persons, when they are lawfully called vnto them. And although it be free for euery man to choose any kinde of life, to the which he shall feele himselfe apt: yet we must put a difference betweene a publike and a priuate office. To a publike office is required ordinarie authoritie. For no man may take vnto himselfe a publike office either in  
the

1 Tim. 5, 8.

A lawfull calling.

What offices are lawfull & to be allowed



cap 5 v 6

the Church, or in the common weale, except he be appointed thereunto by ordinary authoritie, he that doth the contrary, doth sinne, and in affliction can haue no certayne comfort. Wherefore here the godly man will especially take heede, that he doe not enter into a publike office without a lawfull calling. A priuate office euery man may choole vnto himselfe, yet the authoritie of parents ought not here to be contemned. He may applie his minde to the trade of marchandice, whom this kind of life doth please: he may follow hul bandy, which thinketh that it is commodious for him: he may choole some arte or occupation, which is perswaded that it will be profitable vnto him. An idle life belongeth not vnto a godly man but vnto an Epicure rather, wherefore of that I will say nothing.

Howe euery man may take a priuate office vpon himselfe.

In the execution of the office or dutie more things are to be considered. First let faith & loue be rules of the actions. Faith taketh hede that it offendeth not God, & referreth all things to y<sup>e</sup> glory of God. Loue admonisheth y<sup>e</sup> there be no iniurie done to any man, & that y<sup>e</sup> comodities of our neighbour be furthered. Faith desireth God to work with it, & to be it helper. Loue embraceth our neighbor in God. Faith kepeth him that worketh, in the feare of God. Loue kepeth him in charitie toward his neyghbour. Here if riches by y<sup>e</sup> blessing of y<sup>e</sup> Lord come vnto him y<sup>e</sup> laboureth in his lawfull calling, singular heede is to be taken, y<sup>e</sup> our riches be not made vnto vs through our own fault, thornes & snares. For they that are rich haue instruments both vnto vertues & also vnto vices, eue as their minds are affected which possesse the. Therefore Plato in my iudgemēt hath rightly said, y<sup>e</sup> riches wout wisdom are blind, but y<sup>e</sup> the same do quickly see whē they folow true wisdom. For true is this saying:

Most excellent rules to be obserued of euery man in performing his office and dutie.

What wee must doe if God bleesse vs with increase of riches.

*Riches of euill and mischiefe much  
are ministers with speede:  
Which doe also contention  
amongst vs often breede.*

*R.L.*

*Am*

ot think  
dine a vnto  
the faith of  
thou which  
uite, to the  
eth that lay  
his vnto, &  
fayth, and is  
of Christ re  
ur of euery  
doth here by  
doubt whe  
stirly touch  
ction. Cui  
t, the kind of  
ng the kinde,  
it maketh for  
is ordained of  
erring the go  
is comman  
as the dutie of  
e magistrat  
rate, the care  
occupations of  
e in the states  
s, which bring  
s which serue  
p of an house,  
ices, and also  
ed vnto them  
se any kinde  
e per we must  
inate office,  
oyitie. For  
ice either in  
the



cap 5

156

## A Commentarie vpon the

Math. 19. 23.

And for that cause the Lord sayth: That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen. For the most parte vse their riches ill, which they might vse well if they would take the counsaile of godly wisdom. First of all therefore, let the godly man knowe how he ought to be affected in his riches, this may very well be knowne both by the wordes of Dauid and also of Paule. Dauid sayth: If riches increase set not your hearts thereon. Paule sayth: Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high minded, and that they trust not in vncertaine riches but in the liuing God. These two sayings doe preach both of the minde or affection of a rich man, and also of the vse of riches. The mind ought not to be set vpon riches, or vpon a desire to haue, a godly man ought not to measure his felicitie with the deceitfull measure of riches, but he ought to vse them well, least that he himselfe layeth snares for himselfe. Nazianzenus doth very well describe the mind of a godly man toward riches saying:

How the rich of the world ought to be affected.

Psal. 62. 10.

1. Tim. 6. 17.

The minde of the godly concerning riches.

One droppe or little portion,  
of wisdom I wish more:  
Then of riches and worldly wealth,  
abundance and great store.

When as the couetous and ungodly man contrariewise sayth:

Howe the wicked and couetous are affected toward riches.

One droppe of fortunes pleasant cuppe,  
I doe much rather craue:  
Then great increase, yea euen a tunne,  
of wisdom for to haue.

How the godly man must behaue himselfe concerning his riches.

Whosoever therefore wil be godly, let him cast away trust & confidence in riches, least that they be made snares vnto him, least that they doe shutte from him the passage to the kingdome of heauen. Let a sure hope be reposed in God alone, whether riches be increased or diminished, yea or quite taken away, let vs hold fast the true treasure which is Christ Iesus. For he that hath him is rich in deede, although



cap 5. b. 6

Epistle of S. James. 46

though with Lazarus he doth beg his breade. Moreover, when thy mynde is thus affected toward riches, this care shall come into it, that thou doe rightly dispose the riches bestowed vpon thee of God, and that thou be a faythfull steward of them. Wherefore I will hereunto adde a few wordes concerning the lawfull vse of riches. Ischomachus in Xenophon being asked concerning the lawfull vse of riches, answered in these wordes: I ought with my riches to honour the Gods royally, to helpe my frendes wherein they haue neede, and to suffer the Citie to be vnadoyned in nothing wherein I am able. This man being ignorant of true religion, maketh thre partes of the vse of riches, the first part he attributeth to the worship of God, the seconde to his friends being in nede, the thirde to the maintaining and adorning of the common weale, wherein he liueth. But although this sentence of a prophane philosopher is to be praysed, and worthis to be commended to the godly: yet I will shewe moze distinctly and plainly the godly and true vse of substance and riches, which consisteth in foure poyntes.

To assigne all and in due order to be used

The vse of riches diuided into three parts.

The first and principall vse of riches ought to be, that they serue to the maintayning and increasing of the glorie of God. This vse is confirmed by the ende of man. Man was first made, and afterwarde regenerate by the holy ghost, that he shoulde glorifie God. Therefore what gifts so euer we haue, they ought to be referred to this ende of our creation and restoring agayne. Here many being miserably deceiued, do sin. For there are some which bestow nothing at all to the mayntaining of the ministerie. There are some which doe wickedly take away those things that were appoynted of our auncetors for the seruice of God. There are some which with their riches doe encrease the power of tyrannes, to the oppressing of the church & abolishing of religion, for whom it were better, if they had neuer bene borne. For their portion shall be with the deuill

The chiefe & principall vse wherunto riches ought to serue.

How the first and principall vse of riches is vtterly neglected of many.

R.ii. whole

man shall the most well if they first of all ought to be as some both by Paul sayth: If they be not in riches but by both of the the vse of riches, or vpon a sure his felt: he ought to as for him: the mind of a

contrarie will

it away trinit the snare into allage to the used in God sed, yea or sure which a decade, although



comp 5 1/2

## A Commentarie vpon the

whose members they are. Let the godly man therfore vnto whome riches haue chaunced in this worlde, loke vnto this ende of his creation, and bestowe part of his goodes vpon this vse, that he may set forth the glorie of God, and maintayne true religion. Let him set before himselfe the examples of godlye men, as of *Dauid, Iosias, Ezechias, Constantine, Theodosius, Iohn Fredericke Duke of Saxonie, Christierne the thirde king of Denmarke,* and other Princes and godly men, which desired nothing moze, than according to their abilitie to set forth the glorie of God, to helpe them which taught and learned religion, to maintaine schooles, and honest priuileges of schooles, to defende the teachers of godlynesse agaynst the crueltie and iniurie of wicked men, to whom nothing was moze pleasant, than to inuent diuers craftes and wayes, whereby they might oppresse both teachers and learners, the case of which men I do with all my heart lament. For by their reprobate mynde they doe moze and moze plunge themselves in hell.

Examples of such as haue vsed their riches chiefly to the glorie of God.

The seconde right & lawfull vse of riches.

Two sorts of men do chiefly offende in the seconde right vse of riches.

The seconde true and lawfull vse of riches ought to be, that we helpe and adorne the common weales in which we liue, according to the measure of our riches. For this cause tributes are inioyned, that by them as by sinewes the comon weale may be kept and preserued, that is, that they may be ornaments of peace, helpes of lawfull warre, the rewardes of them which gouerne the common weale. But here two kyndes of men doe not a little offende. For there are some, which although they abounde with wealth, renoume, and glorie in the time of peace: yet when anye thing is to be layde out to the vse of the common weale, this they craftily put of from them selues to the silly and simple people who are compelled beyonde their strength and abilitie to bestowe those things which are required. Here although the simple people doe rightly obey: yet these inuentors of mischiefes are reserued for their iudgement.



top. 5 1/2

Epistle of S. James.

ment. There are also perhappes some, who being not content with their ordinarie rents, doe lay newe exactions vpon the subiects, which are condemned by the testimonie of Iohn the Baptist, in as much as they doe not bring forth the fruites of repentance. Christ sayth: *Give to Caesar the things which are Caesars, and giue vnto God those things which are Gods.* But let Caesar knowe that there is a certaine rule which the lawes doe prescribe vnto him. If he shall offende against this, he is made guiltie of the wrath of God. But thou wilt say, is it neuer therefore lawfull for the magistrate to exact of his subiectes any thing beside the ordinarie taxe? We must put a difference betweene the times of peace and warre. In the time of peace let him be content with his ordinarie reuenues, leass that he sine agaynst God: In the time of warre the subiectes doe owe not only their goods, but also their bodies to the magistrate making iust warre, and the godly magistrate may exact vnaccustomed tributes, and require the helpe of the Citizens against the enimies. There may also necessities be incident in the time of peace, that ordinarie stipendes are not sufficient for the magistrate. When this commeth to passe, godly subiectes ought to helpe the present necessities, and the godly magistrate may require so much increase as shall be needefull. But they which do therebpon by litle and litle bring in a custome to oppresse subiects, shall as infidels looke for their punishment at the handes of the iust Iudge, which knoweth howe to bowe downe the neckes of the proude and tyrannes.

Matth. 22. 21.

A question.

The answer.

The thirde right and lawfull vse of riches is, that euery man finde himselfe things necessarte, & do maintayne his familie according to the state of his calling. But here two vices are to be taken heede of, couetousnesse or vile fashions, & prodigalitie. Couetousnesse or filthy behauiour is vnworthie of a mā. Prodigalitie doth rashly waste riches, oftē times vpon bzauerie altogither vnmete for that state

The thirde lawfull vte of riches, wherein are two things especially to be taken heede of.

¶.iii.

or

erfore vn  
take vnto  
his goodes  
of God, and  
himselfe the  
ofas, Exe-  
ricke Duke  
marke, and  
red nothing  
with the glo-  
learned reli-  
uileges of  
agaynst the  
nothing was  
and waues,  
and learners,  
lament. For  
more plauge  
  
ought to be,  
des in which  
es. For this  
by sinewes  
that is, that  
withall warre,  
mon weale.  
offende. For  
with wealth,  
it when anye  
mon weale,  
the silly and  
eir strength  
required.  
obey: yet  
their iudge-  
ment.



cap 5. 16

## A Commentarie vpon the

of calling. Wherefore a meane, which in every thing is commended, is here also to be kept. An honest citizen therefore may with his goodes maintayne that which becometh his estate, let him beware that he take not vpon him that honour that belongeth vnto another, let him leaue to the nobilitie their noblenesse and reputation, so let an honest noble man maintayne his state, and leaue vnto the Princes their magnificence and sumptuousnesse. After the same sort let teachers of godlynes in scholes and temples modestly maintayne their state. Briefly let euery one thinke what is agreeable to his person and condition.

The fourth & last lawful vse of riches.

Why God will haue the poore to be among vs.

The fourth and last right and lawful vse of riches ought to be, that we should be moued also with the calamitie of the needy, and hold this for most certayne, that God doth suffer the poore and needy to be in the myddt of vs, that he may trie of what redines we are to obey his commaundement, (for he doth commaund vs that we shoulde reach forth our hande to the needy) and how mercifull we are toward the members of the sonne of God, which if we doe contemne, we doe despise also the head. For it cannot be that he should loue the head which causeth paine & griefto the members. But of this vse moze hereafter.

### Of contractes or bargaines.

Mutual soci- etie and bargaines are ve- ry necessarie among men.

9th May  
1722

Forasmuch therefore as men are so created, that they must of necessitie liue in societie, and their condition is such, that they cannot maintayne their state without mutual labour and duties: the life of man truly hath neede of contractes or bargaines, by which is made a certayne interchangeable course of laboures and offices. And the societie of men among them selues can no moze want the commoditie of bargaynes, then water and fire. Wherefore seeing that the godly and ungodly are wont to bargayne one with an other, and there is oftentimes no small offence made in bargayning through the naughtines of men.



cap 5 B 0

Epistle of S. James. 48

men: it is a thing necessary that the godly be instructed whereby they may knowe how farre it is lawfull to bargain with a good conscience and without offence to God, that they doe not attempt to doe any thing, their conscience eyther douting, eyther being deceived, eyther striving agaynst them. And although a full and absolute doctrine concerning bargaining doth pertain to the lawyers, who of purpose doe very often teach of bargaynes: yet because ciuil rules often times doe not satisfie mens consciences, I will gather a certayne bryefe aduertisement which the godly minde may safely follow in bargaining. First therefore I will laye two foundations, vpon which all those things which I am about to speake shall depend. Secondly I will declare the chiefe kindes of bargaynes, and will shewe how they agree with the foundation. The first foundation shall be this, taken from the lawe of nature: That which thou wilt not haue done to thy selfe, doe not thou to another, and contrarywise, that which thou wilt haue rightly done to thy selfe, thou mayst doe to another. Nazianzenus vttereth this foundation after this sort:

To doe those things to other men  
see that thou doe refraine:  
Which thou thy selfe vnwilling art  
to take of them agayne.

Upon this foundation Christ will haue all duties among men, yea and all actions and bargaynes to be buylded. For thus he sayth: *Matth. 7. Whatsoeuer ye woulde that men shoulde do to you, euen so doe ye to them.* He addeth the reason of this foundation. *This, sayth he, is the lawe and the Prophetes, that is, this is the scope and ende of the Lawe and the Prophetes, or whatsoeuer the lawe and the Prophetes doe commaunde, it is centayned in this common poynt.* And Paul sayth: *He that loueth another, hath fulfilled the lawe.* Also: *The ende of the commaundement is loue out of a pure heart, signifying that all duties among*

The first foundation of all contracts and bargaynes.

The confirmation of the first foundation of bargaynes.

Rom. 13. 8  
1. Tim. 1. 5.

R.iiii. men

ry thing is  
cizen ther-  
which becom-  
not vpon him  
him leaue to  
so let an ho-  
me into the  
asse. After the  
and complex  
let eneye one  
condition.  
riches ought  
e calamitie of  
that God doth  
of us, that he  
s commaunde-  
shoulde reach  
recessfull we are  
which if we doe  
it cannot be  
paine & griefe  
fizer.  
atod, that they  
our condition is  
re without un-  
hath neede of  
a certayne in-  
is. And the so-  
more want the  
er. Therefore  
to bargayne  
no small of-  
ughtines of  
men:



CON 5 125

## A Commentarie vpon the

The effects of  
true loue.

men are to be tried and examined by loue as by a touch-  
stone. This loue as it doth not to any other that which it  
will not haue done to it selfe: so it doth rightly to euery  
m in that which it would haue done to it selfe. This foun-  
dation as it doth in euery bargayne require true dealing  
and exclude deceite: so it will haue equalitie betweene  
them that bargaine according to the proportion of an A-  
rithmetick, which doth measure, number and wey all  
chaunging equally, and therefore the bargaine which is  
grounded on this foundation is to be accounted equal and  
lawfull. Equall, bicause an Arithmetickall proportion is  
obserued therein. Lawfull, bicause it is agreeable to the  
law of nature, which a wise lawyer in the doctrine of bar-  
gaines doth set before his eyes. Whereupon it commeth  
to passe that it is called lawfull also, bicause it is confir-  
med eyther by a law made, or by the decree of wisemen  
not disagreeing with the ten commaundements, which are  
an abridgment of the law of nature.

Bargaines  
grounded vpon  
the foun-  
dation afore-  
sayd are both  
equall and  
lawfull.

The seconde  
foundation of  
contracts and  
bargaynes.

Let the second foundation be this taken from the na-  
ture of the Gospell: The Gospell doth approue ciuil or-  
dinaunces, which the wise magistrace doth iudge to be  
profitable to his common weale. This is manifest, bicause  
the Apostles of Christe did neuer change the forme of ci-  
uil ordinaunces, where they taught the Gospell: which  
without doubt they would haue done, if they coulde not  
haue stand with the Gospell. The Apostle knew that there  
was a difference to be put betweene the kingdomes of  
the world and the kingdome of Christ. They, bicause they  
are worldly, are ruled by ciuil lawes and ordinaunces, this,  
bicause it is spirituall, is governed spirituallly. Upon this  
foundation it followeth, that as a godly man may vse the  
ciuil ordinaunces of that common weale wherin he liueth:  
so it is lawfull for a wise magistrate to make lawes pro-  
fitable to his common weale, by which bargaines and of-  
fices of a ciuil life are governed. But I would haue these  
thinges



cap 5 49

Epistle of S. James. 49

Things so to be taken, that the law giuer doe not swarue from the first foundation, and the tenne commandements, that is, that he make no law disagreeing with the loue of God and charitie towardes our neyghbours. These two foundations I will haue aplyted to all bargaynes, as consultations by which it shall be pronounced as often as a question is moued concerning any bargayne.

The kindes of ciuill bargaynes, of which we haue determined in this place to speake are these: 1. Exchange of things. 2. Bying and selling. 3. Borrowing. 4. Lending. 5. Letting forth and hyring. 6. Contracts of societie. If there be any other kindes of bargaynes, let them be learned out of the wytinges of wise lawyers, whom the godly mind may safely follow, except it seeth them contrary to the loue of God and charitie toward our neighbour. There are some which make two chiefe kinds of bargaynes: one whereby the dominion of a thing together with the vse is translated from ones possession to an others, the other, wherby y only vse of a thing is graunted. Aristotle taught that the exchange of things is diuided into three partes. The first, whereby things are changed with things, the second, whereby things are changed with mony, the third wherby mony is changed with mony. I confesse y epyther diuision is learned & perfect, yet I do prefer before others this comon diuision which I haue set downe, not bicause it is more perfect or learned, but bicause it comineth nerer to the capacite of the people, and is more vsuall. Therefore I leaue both that diuision of two partes, and also that of three partes of Aristotle to the lawyers and philosphers to be disputed vpon, being about to speake in order of those sixe kindes which I haue propounded.

He purposeth to speake of sixe feuerall kindes of bargaynes.

Of the Exchange of things.

Changing of one thinge for an other before money was inuented was most vsuall and profitable, as with

Di out

a touch- which it to euerye This fourme dealing betweene an of an A- and way all me which is ed equal and proportion is ceable to the crime of bar- it cometh e it is confis- of wisemen is, which are from the na- groue ciuill or- th indge to be mist, because he forme of ci- spell: which ey could not rem that there kingdome of , because they inances, this, p. Upon this to may be the in be liueth: e lawes pro- aines and of to haue the things



cap 5 20

A Commentarie vpon the

out which the societie of man coulde not be mayntayned. But the vse of money being inuented, it was not so vsuall amongst all. Now exchange of thinges is then made, whē thinges are changed not with mony but with other thinges, as when wine is changed with corne, or hides with butter. This exchange of thinges is then lawfull, when it doth not depart from those two foundations which we haue made concerning euery honest bargaine. In the chaunging of thinges therfoze equalitie is to be kept w<sup>o</sup>ut deceit. For deceit may be here committed many wayes, but especially after thre sortes, in substance, in quantitie, in qualitie. In substance, if mingled wine be giuen for pure wine, if graine or corne mingled with cockle or darnel, or with the seede of any such corrupt and naughtie weedes, be vttered for good grayne. In quantitie, if equalitie be not kept in weight, measure, and number. In qualitie, when naughtie and corrupt thinges be vttered for pure and sound thinges. Whosoener vseth deceit in these, as he doth ouerthrow y<sup>e</sup> foundatiōs of iustice, so if he do it knowing it and willingly, he sinneth against God, passeth y<sup>e</sup> rule of charity and is made gilty of y<sup>e</sup> breaking of humane societie. Many men doe flatter & as it were tickle themselves, when in exchange of thinges they doe deceiue any, but it falleth out with these as with y<sup>e</sup> fishes, which together with y<sup>e</sup> bait deuoure also y<sup>e</sup> hooke. For the gaine is pleasant, but they being held fast w<sup>o</sup> the hoke of Satan, shal not escape punishment. But I am not ignorant what good men do perhaps speake against these thinges. For deceitful mē haue a thousand wils & crafts, by which they do deceiue themselves & not God, who equitie requireth tēpered with sincere charitie.

How exchange of thinges is made and when it is lawfull.

In changing of thinges chiefly three kindes of deceit may be vset.

Of bying and selling.

Bying and selling neyther very auncient nor yet com-

Bying and selling are properly sayd to be, as often as thinges are changed not with thinges but with money. This kinde of bargayning is neyther most auncient, nor most



top 5 2 6

Epistle of S. James. 50

most common. For both it was unknowne to those men mon among all nations.  
 that liued in the former ages of the worlde, and also at this  
 day it is not in vse among manye nations. But it was  
 brought in among many onely through the necessitie of  
 mans lyfe, whereupon also it hath the name of mony. For  
 it is called in Latine *Namus*, as it were of the Greeke  
 worde *Nomos*, which signifieth a lawe, bicause it hath of-  
 tentimes it vse and value by the iudgement, determina-  
 tion, and lawe of men. In this kynde of bargayne he that A seller.  
 translateth a thing into the dominion and possession of an-  
 other receyuing mony for it, doth sell, and the thing that  
 is translated is ware or merchandice. On the contrarye, A byer.  
 he which giuing mony recepueth ware or marchandice, is  
 sayde to buye. Here we must not regarde what the monye  
 is worth in it selfe, but publike authoritie, vse, or iudge-  
 ment is to be considered. For the value of the mony is by  
 lawe rather than by nature. Therefore equalitie is not  
 here to be considered in the substance of the mony, but in  
 the vse thereof. This kinde of trade according to the foun-  
 dations befoze layde, requireth equalitie without decepte  
 betwene the byer and the seller: He which here wittingly  
 and willingly doth oppresse or defraude his brother in any  
 matter, hath contrary to the precept of Paule broken the 1. Theisal. 4. 6.  
 equalitie of iustice required in contracts and bargaynes.  
 Therefore the godly must take especiall heede, that they  
 doe vse no decepte eyther in the wares or in the price. Let  
 the ware be sayde of the seller to be such as it is in deede,  
 or at the least, such as it is thought to be, without falthode  
 and deceite, let the due price be aunswereable thereunto,  
 that the proportion of an Arithmeticke maye be obserued.  
 But here it may not without a cause be demaunded what  
 the due or reasonable price is. To this I doe thus simplye  
 aunswere. Euery price is not due and reasonable which VWhat is to be obserued concerning the price of things.  
 the byer & the seller do agree vpon betwene themselues  
 by their priuate iudgement: but h which eyther is named

D.ii.

and

apned.  
 a bitall  
 ad. whie  
 things,  
 butter,  
 in it doth  
 we haue  
 chaung  
 out dect.  
 but elpe  
 in quali  
 ure wine,  
 for with  
 edes, be  
 lie be not  
 tie, when  
 and found  
 doth over  
 wing it and  
 e of charity  
 ric. Ham  
 when in ex  
 fallerth out  
 h hat de  
 ut they be  
 ape punish  
 no perhaps  
 me a thou  
 elnes & not  
 re charite.

often ad  
 th money,  
 aricant, my  
 most



cap 5 v 8

### A Commentarie vpon the

and set of the tust and publike priers of thinges ordayned of the magistrate, or which is priced according to the common value of the thing, at that time when the bargayne is made. He therefore which to day doth buy a bushell of corne according to the common price for three shillings, may alterward, a certayne time being betwene, sell the same for sixe shillings, if this then be the common price. Contrariwise, if after certayne moneths it be bought commonly for one shilling, he offendeth which at ketch thre for it, although he bought it for thre. For here regard is to be had of the time and place, and the plentie and scarcitie of the thinges which are solde, is to be considered. But here three sortes of men doe most grievously offende, as they that ingrosse all into their owne hands, that no man may sell or gayne but they, hucksters commonly called regraters, and they which doe first set a price of things according to their owne priuate iudgement, that their couetousnesse maye be satisfied. In the number of these are they which haue plentie of Butter, Oren, wine, corne, or other things through the yerely profites of their rents. When as some hauing neede doe buye of these they are compelled, whether they will or no, to giue so much as is asked: Whereby oftentimes it commeth to passe, that the seller of corne or other things, the common price being not yet set and confirmed, doth sell exceeding deare. Whole example when other also which haue plentie of the lyke things, doe followe, it falleth out that a bushell of corne, which perhaps otherwise might be sold for two shillings, is solde for eyght. But thou wilt say, the ware is myne, why is it not lawfull for me to sell it as I can: the buyer is free, he may eyther buye or not buye, what doe I therefore offend? Thy sinne is exceeding great, cloke it by what name or title soeuer thou wilt. For thou doste not so much offende agaynst thy buyer, as agaynst the whole common weale, which thou doste wounde worse, than if thou didst

inuade

Three kindes of men especially do offend in bying and selling.

An obiection.

The aunswere  
How greuously they sinne, which enhance and



copy 5. 10

Epistle of S. James. 51

invade it with robbetrie. For through thy couetousnesse it  
 commeth to passe that many are pyned with miserie and  
 famine. He which is iniurious agaynst one man doth de-  
 serue euerlasting paynes : what shall be thought concer-  
 ning thee, which killest so many families with hunger, or  
 at the least art the cause that they liue in greater miserie:  
 Thou mayst excuse thy selfe before the iudgement seat of  
 men, but God doth not esteeme such craftie euasions, nei-  
 ther is he deceyued with the peruerse interpretation of his  
 lawe. For his iudgement seat is iust, which doth not re-  
 garde the person. The buyers also doe here oftentimes  
 offende. For it falleth out sometimes that they buye dea-  
 rer, eyther bicause the payment is deferred, or that they  
 may procure the fauour of great men, of whom they buye,  
 that the gayne which is nothing at all hoped for by the  
 things that are bought, may be recompenced by some o-  
 ther meanes. Here more things might be sayde, but these  
 may be sufficient for them that haue vnderstanding. For  
 I doe looke to preuayle little with them, which loue godli-  
 nesse with *Aiax*. *Aiax* would seeme deuout towards God  
 so long as he perceyued nothing to bee required of him  
 which was contrary to his affections : but when he was  
 commaunded to spare *Vlysses*: In other things, sayth he,  
 I will obey thee, but not in this thing. Of this sort is the  
 religion of many at this day, they will be louers of godly-  
 nesse so that it doth not disagree with their affections,  
 which they will haue wholye to be satisfiæd, yea though  
 God be angrie therewithall. What I pray you, is more  
 horrible than to preferre their owne affections before the  
 commaundement of God? But this is sufficient, for these  
 men will not heare vs. The question concerning the rede-  
 ming of a bargayne, is dissolued out of *Leuiticus*, where  
 the Lorde doth commende vnto his people the lawe con-  
 cerning the redeeming of bargaynes. But then onely I  
 iudge this kynde of bargayning to be allowed, when it

rayse the price  
of thinges  
without cause

To loue god-  
lines with *A-  
iax*, is so long  
only to be  
godly while  
nothing is re-  
quired of vs  
contrary to  
our owne af-  
fections, in  
which num-  
ber are too  
too many at  
this day.

Redeming of  
bargaynes.

D.iii. doth

orday  
oping to  
the bar  
buy a bus  
for three  
betwene,  
common  
be bought  
at last the  
regard is  
and fear  
be confide  
worth of  
hands, that  
commonly  
a piece of  
ment, that  
number of  
Open, wine,  
sices of their  
of these they  
e so much as  
a pisse, that  
spice being  
are. Whose  
of the lyke  
ill of come,  
so shillings,  
it is myne,  
the buyer  
for I there-  
it by what  
at so much  
common  
then didst  
invade



cap 5 b. 5

## A Commentarie vpon the

booth not disagree with the foundation before taught: Do not that to another which thou wilt not haue done to thy selfe. As the conscience of a godly man maye trust vnto this onely foundation in all bargaynes: so also in that bargayne wherein is made a couenant for the redeeming thereof.

### Of Borrowing.

¶ What borrowing is.

Two thinges to be marked in borrowing.

A precept of Hesiodus concerning borrowing and restoring that which is borrowed.

¶ We are bound by a double bond to lend vnto others.

Luke. 6. 35.

Borrowing is a contract or bargayne whereby the dominion of a thing is translated vnto an other, no price being put betweene, but with a couenant that the same thing be restored agayne in the same kind or sort. But here are two thinges to be considered of the godly, equalitie, and a bond. Equalitie, if in equal number, measure and weight thou restore that which thou hast receyued without deceit: deceit excludeth fault in the substance, quantitie, and qualitie of the thing. To this belongeth that precept of *Hesiodus*: Borrowe of thy neyghbour by righte measure, and restore agayne by the same right measure, and by greater also if thou art able. Where as he sayth: & by greater if thou art able, it may apertayne vnto thankfulness, although the Poet maketh an other cause, to wit this: that thou mayest find thy neyghbour ready to lende thee, if at any other time thou hast neede. Let there be a double bond obserued, a naturall and a christian bond. The naturall bond is that, by which we are bound by the law of nature to lend vnto others, which doe neede that thing that is ours. Of this bond the precept of *Hesiodus* may be vnderstand. The christian bond is, by which the Lord doth bind those that are his to lend all that neede, that is, not onely them, of whom we hope for the like agayne, but euen those, of whom we looke for no such good turne or benefite. Lend, sayth Christ looking for nothing agayne. Christ doth not speake here of free giuing or of almes, whereby he which hath borrowed any thing, is bound

co



Epistle of S. James.

cap 5 60

to restore the same agayne, without deceit in the same kind or sort: But this commaundement of Christ is set agaynst the malice of the Jewes, and the corrupting of the lawe of Moses. The lawe commaundeth to lende, but the Jewes tooke it to be spoken with this exception: lende not indifferently to all that haue neede, but onely to them, of whom the like benefite may be looked for agayne. This error and corrupting of the lawe of God the Lorde doth correct, and commaundeth them that be his, not onely to lende them which are able to render the like good turne agayne, but also others, to wit them, of whom they neuer looke for the lyke benefite agayne. Let vs make this manifest by an example: Some sithers desireth to borrow something of thee, nowe thou thinkest with thy selfe, that he may at some time or other pleasure thee agayne eyther in the lyke, or in some other kynde of dutie. If thou hast lent him with hope of the lyke benefite agayne, thou hast offended nothing. For what doth he offende which for a good turne looketh for thankfulness. There cometh another hauing neede, whose state is such that thou mayest looke for no recompence at all of him. If thou wilt not lend this man, thou breakest the rule of Christ, following rather the wicked custome of the heathen, than the commaundement of Christ, whereby thou shewest that thou dost contemne the voyce of Christ. Wherefore Christ doth not here commaunde that thou shouldest not looke that that shoulde be restored which thou hast lent, as some do unwisely interpret this saying, for then it shoulde not be called lending, but almes rather: but he hath regarde to the persons, to wit, that the godly doe helpe them by lending, of whome they loke for no comodity or benefite agayne. This my interpretation y circumstāces of y place do confirme, for in that place the Lord correcteth y corruptions of the Pharisees, by which they seruing their owne affectionz, had maliciously corrupted the lawe of God. They did interpret

How the Jewes corrupted the law concerning lending.

The meaning of the saying of Christ before mentioned concerning lending.

D.iiii. the



Comp 5. 10 5

## A Commentarie vpon the

the precept concerning lending, as I haue also touched before, after this sort. Lend, but lend him which is able to lende thee agayne when thou doest neede, or by some o- ther kinde of dutie to recompence the benefite and to shew thankfulness. This restraynt Christe taketh away by this foundation: *If ye doe good for them which doe good for you what thanke shall ye haue? and if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receiue, what thanke shall ye haue? for e- uen the sinners lend to sinners to receiue the like. that is, that they may at some other time shewe the like pleasure to them agayne, eyther particularly or generally. The summe therefore of the precept of Christ is, that we doe not lend them only which are able to requite the same, but also others of whom we looke for no recompence of a be- nefite bestowed. Hereunto pertayneth the saying of the Psalmist: A good man is mercifull and lendeth. Here the Psalmist numbzeth the duty of lending among the fruites of the feare of God. And although the vngodly also doe sometimes lend, yet we must diligently put a difference betweene the lending of the vngodly and of the godly. The vngodly doe onely regard their owne commoditie, but the godly doe meditate and thinke vpon these thinges in order. First they haue regarde to the commandement of God, by which they know they are bound, and therfore they lend with a cheerfull mind and a ready will, bicause God hath so commaunded, and they iudge the duty of len- ding whereby they doe releue the needy, to be a necessary woꝝke and a seruice which God doth earnestly requite of them that be his. Secondly they doe adioyne sayth by which they behold the promise of God who promileth re- compence of obedience as the Psalmist sayth: Blessed is the man that feareth the Lord. &c. Also, who shall dwell in thy tabernacle? he that worketh righteousnes. Moreover the godly doe consider the objects, they weigh with them- selues that they are the members of Christ which require their*

Luke. 6. 33.  
34.

Psal. 112. 5.

The lending  
of the godly  
and of the vn-  
godly doe  
much differ.

¶ What the  
godly confi-  
der and re-  
gard in their  
lending.

Psal. 119. 1. 2.



cap 5 b. 5  
Epistle of S. James.

53

their helpe. Wherefore they doe lend them that they may comfort and refreſhe the members of Chriſt. By theſe differences the lending of the goodly is diſtinguiſhed from the lending of the vngodly, who regard onely them ſelues and their owne commoditie.

Of Vſurie.

That borowing is done after two ſortes euen experience it ſelfe doth wicnes. For ſometime it is done with a couenant, ſo much, equal weight, meature, & nūber being kept, as was receiued, be reſtored, & nothing moze. Of which kind of borowing it hath bene hitherto ſpoken of vs. Sometime it is done with a couenant, that ſomewhat moze then the principall, as they call it, be giuen for the dutie of lending. The taking of this exceſſe or ouerplus is an offence, eſpecially when it commeth for the duty of lending which we owe to our neighbour by Gods law and by the law of nature. And it is called vſurie of this, becauſe it commeth to the principall for the vſe of euerie thing. Neyther muſt we thinke that vſurie hath place in the lending of money onely. For in the lending of all thinges that is ſayd to be vſurie, which for the bounden dutie of lending is ginen, moze then that that was receyued, as the lawe doth playnely ſhewe, and Ambroſe witteneth, when he ſayth: Deate is vſurie, and a garment is vſurie, and giue it what thou wilt, it is vſurie. Now I call that the bounden dutie of lending to the which we are ſo bound by Gods law and by the law of nature, that vnleſſe we doe lend him that deſireth vs and doth neede in deede, we do ſinne againſt God, & violate the charitie due to our neighbour. And although it may after a ſort be vnderſtand by thoſe thinges which haue bene ſayd concerning borowing, what is to be iudged of vſurie: yet for plainer inſtructions ſake I thinke it meete and expedient to adde hereunto ſome thing concerning vſurie. But that there

Two ſortes of borowing.

Vſuria' Vſurie conſiſteth.

P. i.

may



cap 5 v 6

## A Commentarie vpon the

The chiefe points which he meaneth to handle concerning vsury.

may be a due order of the handling therof, we will intreat of these things in order. First we will declare what prohibitions or forbiddings there be of vsurie, and what be the causes of these prohibitions. Secondly, we will note the punishments of vsurers, that the thinking of the punishments maye somewhat repress the couetousnesse of vsurers. Then we will make diligent inquisition whether there be any contract or bargayne like vnto vsurie in part, which is not forbidden by the law of God. And if there be any such, howe farre the godly man maye vse it with a good conscience, and without offence to God. Moreover we will gather certaine admonitions, vnto which as vnto certaine consultations, and rules to take counsell by, it shalbe profitable to haue regard in euery kinde of bargaines and businesse. Finally we will admonish how the stewards of the mysteryes of God, that is, the preachers of the Gospel maye behaue themselues in the matter of vsurie, that they do neyther communicate with other mens offences, nor attempt any thing that may turne to their destruction.

### Of the first.

Foure prohibitions of vsurie.

**T**he prohibitions or forbiddings of vsurie are four, into which if we will godlye and earnestly looke, we shall perceyue moze clearly than the daye what is to be iudged concerning this whole trade of vsurie. Wherefore I will rehearse them distinctly and in order.

The first prohibition of vsurie.

The first is sayde to be naturall. For Aristotle without controuersie the chiefe of Philosophers, doth teach that vsurie is agaynst nature, being moued by this argument: Money by nature cannot bring forth, therefore to take vsurie of money is contrary to nature. And for this cause vsurie is thought to be called of the Grecians *Tocos*, of bringing forth, as though there were a certaine birth of money, that euen by the very name it may be infamous. Aristotle calleth vsurie a beast, which in proesse of time doth

The very heathen Philosophers did disallow vsurie and affirme it to be contrary to nature.



top 3. 10  
Epistle of S. James.

54

doth bring forth mony in more abundant increase. Plato also doth cast vsurie out of his common weale. For thus he sayth in his fift booke of lawes: Let it be lawful if any taketh mony vpon interest, to reder neither the interest, nor the principall. This prohibition of Plato is grounded vpon a naturall principle, to wit, that that is in no case to be suffred in a citie, whatsoeuer it be, which is agaynst the lawe of nature and mutuall charitie, and is the cause of the ruine of families and common weales, which nature biddeth to be preserued and maintayned. Plutarch concludeth that vsurie is contrary to nature by this principle: Of nothing nothing is made. Cicero compareth vsurie to man slaughter. Wherefore it is manifest that as manslaughter is contrarie to nature, so also vsurie is contrarie thereunto. Moreover, inequality in bargaining is agaynst nature. For the worke thereof is the destruction of nature. Sayne therfore that is giuen for the bounden dutie of lending is agaynst nature. For it doth manifestly bring inequality. Finally, seing that the ciuill societie is especially according to nature, trulye it must be that vsurie is an enimie to nature, inasmuch as it doth appayze and diminish the humane societie.

Other reasons  
proving vsury  
to be against  
nature.

The seconde prohibition is diuine. For Moses, the Prophetes and the Psalmes doe forbid and condemne vsurie. The cause of this forbidding is expressely added in many places, to wit, that our neighbour be not oppressed with vsurie. Exod. 22. If thou lend mony to my people, that is, to the poore with thee, thou shalt not be as an vsurer vnto him: thou shalt not oppresse him with vsurie. Leuit. 25. Thou shalt not giue him thy monie to vsurie, nor lende him thy vittayles for increase. The cause of the precept goeth before: that thy brother may liue with thee, to wit, not oppressed with vsurie. Deut. 23. Thou shalt not giue to vsurie to thy brother: as vsurie of mony, vsurie of meat, vsurie of any thing that is put to vsurie. Vnto a straunger thou

The second  
prohibition of  
vsurie out of  
the word  
of God.

Verse. 25.

Verse. 37.

Verse 19. 20.

P.ii.

mayst

I treat  
at prohibi-  
tion be the  
ill note the  
the punish-  
ment of blu-  
ry whether  
me in part,  
and if there be  
it with a  
moreouer we  
as vnto cer-  
by, it shall be  
gaines and  
forwards of  
of the Gospel  
rie, that they  
inces, nor at-  
ruction.

erie are four,  
the look, we  
what is to be  
e. Wherefore

without  
each teach that  
his argument  
to take vsu-  
ries cause vsu-  
ries, of by in-  
birth of mo-  
nious. Ari-  
cesses of time  
duty



comp 5. 6. 5

## A Commentarie vpon the

mayst lende vpon vsurie, but thou shalt not lende vpon vsurie vnto thy brother, that the Lorde thy God may blesse thee in all that thou settest thine hande to. Moses speaketh here also of the vsurie that oppresseth our neighbour. For out of the Hebrue text it may thus be translated: Thou mayst byte a straunger with vsurie, but thy brother thou shalt not byte. Ezech. 18. He that hath not giuen forth vpon vsurie, neyther hath taken any increase, is iust, and shall surely liue. Herevpon it followeth in the contrarie sense, that he is vniust and shall die which hath giuen vpon vsurie and taken increate. In the 15. Psalm it is sayde that he shall dwell in the tabernacle of the Lord which giueth not his mony vpon vsurie. And that this Psalm also speaketh of vsurie which byteth and oppresseth our neyghbour, it is manifest. For the Psalmist bleseth the worde *Nesec*, which hath it name of biting. Agayne, there is no doubt, but that vsurie is here prohibited, which before was forbidden in Moses, to wit, that which biteth and oppresseth our neighbour. For the Prophetes bring no newe doctrine, but only are interpreters of Moses.

Verse. 8.

The third prohibition of vsurie taken from ciuill ordinances & lawes of common weales.

The thirde prohibition is politike or ciuill. For among the most auncient Romanes there was no maner, no permission of vsurie, but publike cursing and punishing thereof. But in procelle of time, when together with rule and riches, couetousnesse and riot did increase, vsurie began by little & little, and was oftentimes more & more increased, vntill the matter of vsurie came vnto sedition and discord, for which cause the gouernours of common weales, because they coulde not vtterly abolishe vsurie, did with lawes repress it as much as they coulde. The citie of Athens did commit wholly vnto *Solon* that he shoulde moderate the vsurie by which the Athenians were almost oppressed. For when there was a sedition risen for the crueltie of vsurers, which did compell the sonnes and daughters of their debtors to be brought into bondage, and to be solde, that the interest



cap 5 6 6  
Epistle of S. James.

55

interest might be payde : Solon, the Citizens requesting him, made the first lawe, that it shoulde not afterward be lawfull that any free bodie shoulde be brought into seruitude for debtes or vsury. And this measure of vsury did Solon ordayne, that no more shoulde be demaunded than the hundreth part, that is, so much as did counteruayle the principall in the hundreth moneth, that is, of an hundreth crownes euery moneth one crowne. But the Emperours did forbid the hundreth part to be receyued for interest, except it were in things caried ouer the sea, but in other lawfull trades they did permit the eyght part of the hundreth, that is, of an hundred crownes euery yere eyght crownes. But to the Noble men in euery contract or bargaine they did not permit aboute the fourth part of the hundreth, that is, euery yeare of an hundreth crownes, foure crownes, but to the comon people the sixt part of the hundreth was permitted, that is, euery yeare of an hundreth crownes, sixe crownes. This moderation of the Emperours was highly to be prayled, which did both repressse the vniust extraction of vsurie, and also prouided that the goodes of priuate men were not wasted by vniemeasurable vsurie.

How Solon did moderate vsurie among the Athenians

The moderation of vsurie which the ancient Emperours made.

The fourth prohibition is ecclesiasticall. Now I call an ecclesiasticall prohibition, not the decrees of the Pope, whom we doe acknowledge neither the head, nor the taile of the Church, but of holy Synodes, by which vsurie was streightly prohibited. Also the sayings of holy fathers against vsurie. In the 47. decrees there is mention made of the canons of the Apostle, in which vsurie is condemned. The Nicene Synod, in which were 318. fathers did also condemne vsurie. And Gratianus against the vsurie of Clergie men, doth adde these wordes out of the decrees of the Nicene councill. Because many of the clergie for couetousnes sake, seeking after filthy lucre, haue forgotten the diuine precept, wherein it is sayd : He that giueth not his money vpon vsurie, this holy councill hath decreed, that, if

The fourth prohibition of vsurie whiche is taken out of the decrees of Synodes and the sayings of holy fathers.

Gratianus against vsurie.

Psal. 15. 5.

P.iii.

any



cap 5 b. 5.

## A Commentarie vpon the

Hierome a-  
gainst vsurie.

Augustine a-  
gainst vsurie.

Ambrose a-  
gainst vsurie.

any be found after this decree to take vsurie, or by anye such trade to seeke after filthie lucre, &c. he be throwne out of the Clergie, and counted voyde of all ecclesiasticall decree or office. *Hierome* sayth: To seeke vsurie, or to defraude or to take violently doe nothing differ. Lend to thy brother, and take that that thou hast lent and seeke for no ouerplus, because the ouerplus is counted for vsurie. *Augustine* sayth: what shall I say of vsurie, which euen the verie lawes and iudges themselues doe commaund to be rendred? whether is he crueller which stealeth or taketh away any thing from a rich man, or he which killeth a poore man with vsurie? These thinges verily and such like are possessed ill, and I would that they were restozed, but there is none who being Iudge they shalbe required agayne. But now let vs wisely consider what is written: To a faythfull man the whole world is riches, but to an vnfaithfull man not somuch as a halfe peny. Doe we not conuince all men, which seeme to themselues to reioyce in the goods that they haue gotten, and know not how to vse them, to possesse that which belongeth to an other? For that truly belongeth not to an other which is possessed rightly. But that is possessed rightly which is possessed iustly. And that is possessed iustly, which is possessed well. Euery thing therefore that is possessed ill, belongeth to another. These wordes sayth *Augustine*. *Ambrose* sayth: Why doste thou turue the industrie of nature into deceit? Why doste thou desire that there shoulde be lack of things necessarpe? Why doste thou make scarcitie to be wished for to the poore, and doste lament common plentie. Thou doest espie when there is small increafe. Thou callest that industrie, which is the practise of subciltie, and that which thou callest a remedie, is a deuise of mischiefe. But may I call vsurie theft (those are taken for the tymes of theft, in which thou being a cruell deceyner, doste creepe into the bowels of men) vnto whom the vsurie of cozne layde by is multi-



Epistle of S. James. 56

multiplied? Why doest thou wish euill to all men: thy  
gain is publicke losse. The same sayth also in an other  
place: He fighteth without a weapon which exacteth vsu-  
rie: he reuengeth himselfe of his enimie without a sword  
which is a receiuer of vsurie. *Chrysostome* sayth: Lende,  
take greater vsurie, but lend so, that thou shalt receiue  
there where as is no enuie, no accusation, no deceit, no ter-  
rour. Lend nothing to them that be in neede but vnto  
Christ who both suffred neede and hunger for thee, and  
also nourisheth all men. For this vsurie doth prepare a  
kingdome, but the other prepareth hel fire: this is a point  
of godlines and mercie, the other of crueltie and conetous-  
nes. The same sayth in an other place: there is nothing  
more filthy then vsurie, nothing more cruel. An vsurer pro-  
cureth the miseries of others and his lucre maketh the ad-  
uertitie of an other. Such a one doth as it wre lift by his  
hand and thrust into shipwrecke. The same saith in an o-  
ther place: The money of an vsurer is like to the sting of  
an Aspe. For he that is stong of an Aspe being as it were  
delighted, doth fall into a sleepe and through the soundnes  
of sleepe doth dye, because then the venim doth priuily  
runne through all his members: So he which taketh by-  
on vsurie, doth for the time seele as it were a benefite, but  
the vsurie doth runne through all his substance, and con-  
uerteth all into dette. *Lactantius* sayth: If a man hath lent  
any money let him not take vsurie, that the benefite may  
be safe and perfect, which releueth necessitie, and let him  
altogither abstaine himselfe from that that is an other  
mans. For in this kinde of dutye he ought to be content  
with his owne, whom it behoueth otherwise not to spare  
that that is his owne that he may doe good. But to take  
more then he gaue is vniust, which he that doth, doth after  
a sort practise deceit, that he may get his pray by the ne-  
cessitie of an other. *Bernard* saith: What is vsurie? the  
poyson of a Patrimonie. What is vsurie according to the  
P. iiii. law?

Chrysostome  
against vsurie.

The money of  
an vsurer very  
fitly compa-  
red to the poi-  
son of an Aspe

Lactantius a-  
gainst vsurie.

Bernard a-  
gainst vsurie.



cap 5 p 5

## A Commentarie vpon the

law? a theefe forgettelling what he intendeth, (to wit, to ra-  
uin). Luther doth most greuously inueigh against vsurers,  
whose writings, because they are in the handes of many,  
I will not here make mention of any thing out of them.  
Hitherto we haue spoken of the prohibitions of vsurie,  
and of the causes of the prohibitions, of all which this sen-  
tence is concluded: that vsurie is therfore forbidden, that  
by it our neighbour be not hurt, that charitie among men  
be not broken, that humane societie be not disturbed, that  
the goods of priuate men be not wasted to the destruction  
of families and common weales. As often as therfore we  
read that vsurie is prohibited, let vs looke vnto these endes  
of the prohibition, least that vnder a pretence of vsurie that  
is forbidden, we doe iudge to sharply of other contractes  
and bargaines which the lawes doe allow.

The chiefe  
causes wher-  
fore vsurie is  
forbidden.

### Of the second.

Three kinds  
of punishment  
of vsurers.

How the aun-  
cient Romains  
punished vsu-  
rers and what  
they iudged  
of them

The corrupti-  
on of our  
time is great.

An example

I find that the punishment of vsurers is of three sortes, to  
wit, ciuil, spirituall, and ecclesiasticall. The ciuil punish-  
ment according to the auncient lawes of the Romans, as  
Cato witnesseth, was, that vsurers should be punished with  
paying foure times as much, theeues with paying onelye  
twise as much. Surely the auncients did sufficiently de-  
clare by this sentence, that they did iudge vsurers to be  
worle and moze hurtfull then common theeues. And for  
this cause they were not suffred to come to publike digni-  
tities and offices as men vnworthy of them, But, alas, so  
great at this day is the corruption of christian maners,  
that they which were infamous among the prophane nati-  
ons, and counted worle then theeues, are iudged worthy of  
very hie honour, yea and that among Christians. I reme-  
ber being a child when there were onely two vsurers in  
this realme which wer commonly knowne: of whom one  
being one of the common sort did dwell in Morea in Den-  
mark. This mā although he was exceding rich through vs-  
urie,



copy 5 p 6

Epistle of S. James. 57

furie, yet after his death his children which he left were brought vnto such pouertie, that we haue seene in this citie a certaine daughter of his, not onely in a cozne and filthy garment, and that scarce couering those partes of the body which nature biddeth to be couered: but also following, in the sight of many, a most filthy trade, whereby notwithstanding she could not keepe her selfe from beggerie. There was an other which came of a better familie, vnto whom no small substance had come by inheritance. This man, greedy desire of money picking him forward, doth apply his mind to vsurie, and by little and little doth heape vp gaine gotten by vsury, that he became exceeding rich in money. But what commeth here to passe? riches vniustly heaped vp went partly to the kinges Elchequer, I cannot tell for what causes, and partly doe yet serue to maintaine gluttony and riot. Wherby it is easie to coniecture, what the ende of them will be, which as yet doe enjoy any of those riches, vnlesse they doe in time repent.

ample wor-  
thie to be  
noted of all,  
but specially  
of vngodly  
vsurers.

Another ex-  
ample of an  
vsurer.

But thou wilt say, what doe these thinges pertayne to ciuil punishment? very much in euery respect. For this is the order of the iustice of God, when the ciuil magistrate doth negligently execute the office committed vnto him, God, as the chiefe monarch and prince is wont to put to his hand, and to punish euen ciuil transgressions with corporall punishments, that men may thinke that they shall not therefore escape their due punishments, eyther because their doinges are hid from the ciuil magistrate, or because the magistrate him selfe eyther through feare, or slouthfulness, or ignorance, or to much parcialitie doth not his office, nor calleth all offences to diligent examination.

Though vsu-  
rers are not  
punished of  
men, yet they  
shall not es-  
cape the pu-  
nishment of  
God.

Let not men therfore hereupon promise themselves to escape vnpunished, bicause they seeme that they can easily auoyde the handes of the ciuil magistrate, neither hereupon, because punishments doe not strayght way followe

D. i. their

wit, to ra-  
of usurers,  
of many,  
out of them.  
of vsurie,  
rich this sen-  
bidden, that  
among men  
sturbed, that  
re destruction  
s therfore we  
to these endes  
of vsurie that  
contractes  
  
three sortes, to  
be ciuil punish-  
e Romans, as  
punished with  
paying on the  
sufficiently de-  
vsurers to be  
cues. And for  
publike digni-  
n, But, alas, so  
illian manners,  
prophane nati-  
bged worth of  
fians. I reme-  
two vsurers in  
of whom one  
fore in Den-  
ch through the  
urie,



cap 5 v. 6

## A Commentarie vpon the

their deedes, God himselte not punishing by and by, but deferring the punishment by his wyle counsayle. For punishment is not therfore taken awaye because it is deferred, sith that the Lorde is wont with slownesse of vengeance to recompence the grieuousnesse of punishment. God doth oftentimes mitigate the punishment for repentance sake, yet so, that he leauech euident testimonies of hys iudgement.

Though punishment be deferred, yet it is not therfore taken awaye.

A profitable admonition to vngodly vsurers.

Wherefore I doe admonishe all Usurers that they doe speedily repent, and rather folow penitent *Zachæus*, whose repentance the Gospel commendeth vnto vs, than *Judas*, who by his theft was at the last brought to hang himself. Although they doe litle feare the iudgement of God themselves, yet at the least let them take pitie vpon their children, least that the popson of Usurie which the parents do gather, be deadly vnto the very children. Let them knowe that it is a most true saying :

*The riches that with wrong are got,  
to the thirde beire continue not.*

The spirituall punishment of vsurers though little esteemed of many, yet truly exceeding grieuous.

Note.

The spirituall punishment of Usurers although it be most grieuous, yet many doe contemne it as ridiculous. For whosoever doth practise Usurie, he is without all doubt, out of the familie of God, out of the bodie of Christ. For howe can he be the member of Christ, which with Usurie killeth Christ in his members? Howe can he be counted to be of the familie of God, which fighteth vnder Satan? which mocketh and scozeth at the worde of God? Now they that are not of the bodie of Christ haue nothing to doe with the treasure of the Saints, which is farre more precious than all the riches of this worlde. What treasure can be greater than to possesse Christ? What riches more excellent than the inheritance of the kingdome of God? These treasures, these riches hath *Lazarus* being full of sores, & poze, but fearing God, which the rich glutton shall want for euer, and wish him, as many as casting aside



cap 2. v. 9.  
Epistle of S. James. 58

alſo the feare of God doe ſeeke after vniuſt gaine. What, I pray thee, is it, if thou be able with thy vſurie to gayne the riches of Cræſus, and in the meane ſeaſon to loſe thine owne ſoule? A peruerſe iudgement. Thou haſt exceeding great care of this time which ſhall ſhortly come to an end, but there doth not ſo much as a thought come into thy mynde concerning the time to come, whereof there ſhall be no ende. I therfore, if my admonition may any thing preuaile, doe exhort all them which doe thinke verily that there is a God, which doe acknowledge God to be a iuſt iudge, and which do beleue that there is any lyfe remaining after theſe aſhes, that they doe ſpeedily repent, that when the Lorde ſhall come ſooner than they thinke for, he may finde them appaſſelled with a wedding garment, and not with an helliſh garment which they haue got vnto themſelues by their vſurie.

Eccleſiaſticall puniſhment agaynſt vſurers was in time paſt of this ſort: Firſt they were not admitted to the ſolemne ceremonie of the offering. Alſo they were put back from the communion of the bodie and bloude of the Lord. Moreouer, they were excluded from Chriſtian buriall. This puniſhment agaynſt Vſurers was moſt grieuous, neuertheleſſe, moſt iuſt. For firſt concerning the ceremonie of the offering, or the almes giuen to the vſe of the miniſters of the Goſpell, or to the releeuing of the poore, we muſt vnderſtande that almes giuen of goodes gotten by Vſurie is abhominable to God. For no ſacrifices (for liberalitye towarde the poore being rightly done, is a certaine kynde of ſacrifice) can pleaſe God, but thoſe which being juſtly gotten, doe come from a pure mynde and right will, ſayth ſhyning befoze. For this is moſt true, that no mans woꝝke can pleaſe God, befoze that the mynde doth pleaſe him, but the mynde doth in no wyſe pleaſe except it doth befoze in the ſpirite of fayth humble it ſelſe befoze God. Both of theſe is confirmed by this ſaying of Eſay. chap. 66.

Q.ii.

T

How vſurers were puniſhed heretofore according to the cenſure of the Church.

Vſurers were very juſtly prohibited from the ceremonie of offering.



## A Commentarie vpon the

To him will I looke (sayth the Lorde) that is humble and of a contrite spirite, and trembleth at my wordes. He that killeth a bullocke (to wit, without humilitie of spirit) is as if he slewe a man, he that sacrificeth a shepe, as if he cut of a dogges necke. By these wordes (that I may speake briefly) the Prophet signifieth, that to the vncleane all things are vncleane, and that nothing doth please God, but that which proceeding from the true feare of God, is done iustly and of them that be iust. But I see what is obiected against me: Usurers, say some, doe professe one Christian sayth with vs, why therefore is it not lawfull for them to communicate with the godly in outwarde things onely?

The aunswere I graunt in dede that Usurers doe professe the Christian sayth with vs, but they doe that onely in wordes, and in the meane season they doe most wickedly denie it in their deedes, whereby it commeth to passe, that both their profession is abhominable before God, and also they themselves, such is their obstinacie and disobedience, are reprobate vnto euery good worke. Agayne, where as Usurers were put backe from the holy supper of the Lorde, it was most iust reason: For what participation haue swine with the bodie and bloude of Christ? what haue they to do with the meate of the children of God, which are the bondslaves of Satan? Giue ye not, sayth the Lord, that which is holy to dogges, neyther cast ye your pearles before swine. Howe, I pray you, is the table of the Lorde meete for them, who being filled with the foode of the deuill, that is, with Usurie, doe excessiuely abounde? Wherefore the Ministers of the Gospel whosoever they be, that knowing and priue therevnto, do offer the most holy bodie and bloud of y<sup>e</sup> Lord vnto Usurers, do not onely wickedly communicate with other mens sinnes, whereof they shall also at the length suffer the punishment: But also as much as in them is, they doe with sacrilege cast the body and bloude of the Lorde, into a most vile and filthie sinke of Satan,

of

An obiection.

The aunswere

Usurers were in time past put backe from the holy communion, and that for most weightie causes & reasons.

Matth. 7. 6.

An admonition to the ministers of the Gospel.



cap 5. p. 6

Epistle of S. James. 59

of which wickednesse they shall in no wise auoyde the punishment. But thou wilt say, many which are as euill as Usurers doe come to the supper of the Lorde. I belecue this truly. For euen Judas also the brother of Usurers did come to the table of the Lord, but what did it profite him? did he not together with the breade swalowe the spirite of Satan, and that not through the fault of him that offered, but through his owne proper fault receyuing it? The Lorde truly offered saluation, but he infected with the venim of couetousnesse, did wickedly refuse that which the Lorde offered, and all that Satan gaue, he swallowed quite by.

But concerning the punishment of Burial, the censure and iudgement of our auncetours did not want most iust reason. But this he shall best vnderstand, which shall perceiue the cause why we do solemnise the funerals of saints and holy men with ceremonies and obsequies. But what is the cause? The hope of a gloriose resurrection. For it is a most worthy thing that we should bestow honest buriall vpon those bodyes, which we hope in time to come shall be made like to the gloriose body of Christ. For when we see the bodyes of the saintes to be committed to the dust, we doe lift by our mindes to him, which in time to come, the voyce of the Archangel going before, shall say: Arise ye dead. And to the dead being raised by he shall giue the glorie of immortalitie. But now seing that the vngodly, among whom are vsurers as the chiefe souldiers and hierlinges of Satan occuppying the first place shal rise againe, as Daniel witnesseth, to euerlasting ignominie and confusion, what godly man will iudge them worchie of the honour of Christian buriall? The 15. Psalme numbreteth him among the godly *Who in his eyes despiseth a vile person, and honoureth them that feare the Lord: How therefore shall he cause him to be buried in gloriose and honorable buriall whom he doth abhorre? Ieremie fogettelth*

Usurers in time past wer excluded fro christian buriall, and that by the iust censure of the Church.

Why we solemnise the burials of holy men.

Reasons and testimonies wherfore vsurers haue bene excluded from christian buriall.

D.iii. that

able and  
He that  
pious) is as  
if he cut of  
peake briefe  
all things  
but that  
done iust  
obeyed ne  
Christian  
for them to  
ngs onely  
Christian  
es, and in  
it in their  
th their pro  
they them  
not, are re  
ere as Us  
the Lorde, it  
in haue some  
ue they to do  
are the bond  
that which  
refuse swine  
be more for  
dewell, that  
therefore the  
pat knowling  
rie and bloud  
by committ  
shall also at  
much as in  
and bloude  
of Satan,  
of



cap 5. b 6

## A Commentarie vpon the

Iere. 22. 19.

that a tyranne shall be buried with the buriall of an Aſſe, and that by the iuſt iudgement of God: What ſhall we determine by the ſame iudgement of God concerning Uſurers, which are crueller then any tyrannes? I doe not paſſe or eſtimate though ſome champion doe falſly attribute vnto himſelfe the ſpirite of prophecie and ſay, that it may come to paſſe, that many which are the enemies of Uſurers may be buried with the buriall of an Aſſe, and in the meane time Uſurers may be brought to buriall with great pompe, the bells ringing and torches caried light before them. I will make no other aunſwere to theſe, but

Pſal. 116. 15.

that euen as in the ſighte of the Lorde the death of his ſaints is precious: ſo is their buriall alſo honourable before God. Wherefore that which we haue witneſſed concerning the honeſt buriall of the Saints doth pertayne to Eccleſiaſticall diſcipline, and not to the iudgement of God whole wayes are vnſearchable. What will here come to paſſe? whome ſhall I not haue reſiſters and ſtriuers agaynſt this moſt iuſt cenſure and iudgement of the Church? ſurely they wil not be wanting which with their colours and fayre gloſes will mitigate the euill of Uſurie.

With what fayre gloſes ſome will ſeke to diminiſhe the heynouſneſſe of uſury.

Many will crie (the Serpent which deceyued our firſt parentes, being their maiſter) that the lawe of Moſes many yeares ago by the comming of Chriſt was repealed, made voyde, and aboliſhed, and doth nothing pertayne to chriſtian people, who enioy their libertie, & do not ſuffer themſelues to be ſtraitly bound with the prohibition of Moſes. This ſpeech truly is plauſible, but it is reproued by the teſtimonie of the conſcience. For they which paynt their couetouſnes with this colour, being deceiued of their domeſticall Eye, which was miſerably ſeduced by the ſerpent, doe fall headlong into their owne deſtruction, and deceyue themſelues by their owne ſubtiltie. For theſe men doe not weygh aright the prohibition of Moſes, neyther doe they conferre the forbidding of Uſurie with the

\* Their owne naturall corruption.



copy 5 H-6

Epistle of S. James. 60

the lawe of charitie as they shoulde doe, which if they did, they shoulde plainly see that vsurie being established, the rule of charitie is ouerthrowne, which God will haue to be perpetuall. Seing therefore that charitie shall be abolished neither in this life noy in the life to come as much as pertayneth to the commaundement and will of God and obedience perpetually due to the same: who doth not see that Usurie, which is quite contrarie to charitie, is condemned? But of this thing sufficient. For before it was shewed of vs at large when we did intreate of the causes of forbidding Usurie, that the forbidding of Usurie did proceede from the lawe of charitie. Wherefore without al doubt they shalbe found naked before God the iudge, which vse this lease already perced through, to hide their filthines.

VWhere vsury is established, there charitie is ouerthrown

Perhaps some will yet except and say: There is no inurie done to him that is willing. He which doth humbly desire to borow money of an Usurer, doth couenant to pay Usurie, not compelled thereunto, but willingly, therefore an Usurer which helpeth a man that humbly intreateth him, is not to be saide to doe against charitie. The principle from whence this reason is taken, is doutfull, in as much as it sayleth in two partes, of which one is true, the other false. For euerie will is not without constraint and of it selfe, which we may easily see in examples. The wayfaring man doth willingly deliuer his treasure to the theefe, which he would not doe, if he did not feare the sword of the theefe. The mariner doth make losse of his marchandise and that willingly when shiptwacke is at hand, but from whence I pray you, doth that will come? truly not of election or choice without constraint, but of feare of the shiptwacke which is at hand. For the mariner doth therefore cast away his marchandise willingly leaste that he himselfe perish together with his marchandise. Wherefore, two euils being set before him, he will willingly

An objection in the behalfe of vsurers.

The aunswer.

Euery will is not without constraint, as it is shewed by examples.

Q.iiii.

lingly

an Ase,  
shall we  
ming Usu-  
I doe not  
fally attri-  
say, that it  
emies of U-  
Us, and in  
buriall with  
caried light  
e to these, but  
death of his  
ourable be-  
attracted con-  
pertaine to  
udgement of  
pat will here  
fers and stric-  
gement of the  
which with their  
will of Usurie,  
ed our first pa-  
of Holes many  
peated, made  
stayne to chize  
not suffer them  
tion of Holes,  
pproued by the  
ich paynt their  
ed of their do-  
ed by the ser-  
tration, and  
e. For these  
of Holes,  
Usurie with  
the



cap 5

### A Commentarie vpon the

lingly choole that euill which seemeth to be the lesse. After the same maner is the will of him that boroweth money vpon Usurie, affected concerning the couenant and promise to pay interest, which truly he promisseth willingly, which he would not doe, if he were not constrained by pouertie, therby to auoyde a greater euil.

Another objection in the behalfe of vsurers.

The answer.

Usurers are Idolaters, and why.

Usurie which some affirme to be the vpholding of families and common weales, is in deede in the ende oft times the viter ruin of them.

Furthermore where as some doe object that families and common weales cannot stand without Usurie: this surely I confes to be true in this corruption of the worlde and in the banishment of manly vertue which was in our auncetours. But from whence I pray you, commeth that commoditie by which thou criest that families & common weales are maintained? doth it come of Usurie? no truly. For no good thing can come of Usurie by it self, but rather a sea of euils. Now if perhaps any good seeme to come of Usury, that is not to be attributed to vsurie, but to the lending, which lending if it were done wout Usurie, it would more profit families & common weales. But thou wilt say, thou locest labour in speaking which goest about to call Usurers, being Idolaters (for Usurers in steede of God do worship riches as God) into the right way. But be it so, inasmuch as they as adders are deafe at y word of y Lord. For they heare nothing with so great indignatio of mind as that their Usurie is condemned. That most filthie lucre is more pleasant vnto them then that they would want it euen with any perill set before them. And surely hereupon it is, that not a few, which might liue welthily enough for the maner of their calling, of the profites of their owne land, doe sell their inheritance, that a certaine sume of money being scraped together and put out to Usurie, they may liue idely vpon their Usurie, and inuent diuers subtle deuises, by which they may hold their detters not without vsurie vpon vsurie, vntil they haue vterly vndone them, not without the exceding great losse of families and common weales. But although these perhaps will not al-

low



cap 5 1/2  
Epistle of S. James. 61

low of our sentence, yet it is our duty to admonish them, that at the least they thinke that the day will come vnloued for, in which they shall render an account to the iust iudge, who as he is corrupted with no accepting of persons, so is he deceiued with no sophistrie or subtiltie. And then at the length Usurers shall perceiue that we did aduertise them of good and profitable things, and that that heathen Poet *Hesiodus* did say true, who being no vaine Poet writeth after this sorte:

*Vse not ill meanes to gaine for gaine ill got  
from verie losse and damage diffreth not.*

From whence had *Hesiodus* this: had he it out of the word of God which Usurers doe contemne? no truly. For that sillie man did not see at any time the writings eyther of the Prophets or of the Apostles. From whence therefore had he it? experience and nature being his teachers he set forth in writing this most true oracle verie well agreeing with the voyce of the Prophets and Apostles. With *Hesiodus* agreeeth *Pindarus* that most auncient Poet of *Thebans*, whom for his singular wisdom *Alexander the great* is sayde to haue embraced: for he saith thus much in effect:

*The mindes of men are redier,  
to praise deceitfull gaine:*

*Then iustice to embrace and eke,  
true dealing to maintayne:*

*Although they creepe to that sharpe daye,  
their life being nigh spent:*

*When for vniustice done they shall,  
receiue due punishment.*

That day, which shall follow the delightes and pleasures that the vngodly take of their vniust gaine, *Pindarus* calleth a day appoynted for punishment. For as in the next day after the festiuall dayes (in which the most part doe more freely without consideration giue ouer themselves

R.i.

to



cap 5. *A Commentarie vpon the*

to all kind of pleasures and delites Men are wont to call to remembrance wherin they did offend more licentiously through drunkennes: so the day of death and of the last iudgement shall be to Usurers as the next day after festiual dayes, in which they doe at the last repent them of their sinnes, but in vaine. For he is by no meanes thought truly to repent, which abstaineth from sin against his will. These thinges I thought good to write somewhat more at large, that I might aduertise Usurers of the wrath of God and of the punishment that hangeth ouer their heades, which they shall no way escape, except they doe repent in time, and for a testimony of their repentance do iustly restore againe, if they shall be able, that which they haue vniustly taken. But if they shall not be able, let them at the least doe what they can, let them craue of God pardon of their fault, let them aske them whom they haue hurt with their vsurie, forgiuenes of the iniurie that they haue done, and let them be reconciled to the Church by publicke satisfaction, least that their portion be with Iudas. But if any shall contemne and deride these our counsels and admonitions, which I dout not but it will come to passe, it maketh no matter to me. I seeke the saluation of wretched men, I tell out the truth which he that will not obey, shall in his time finde a iust iudge who will most iustly punish both his contempt and the contempt of his fauourers.

What vsurers ought to doe, to whom God hath giuen grace to repent and to forsake so detestable a sin.

*Of the third.*

After we haue now spoken of the prohibitions of Usurie and of the causes thereof, and also of the punishments of them, who despising the law both of God and of man doe practise Usurie which is prohibited: the place requireth that we see whether there be any contract or bargaine like vnto Usurie in part, yet not disagreeing with the charitie toward our neighbour, and if there be a  
nye



cap 5  
Epistle of S. James. 62

type such, how farre a goodly man may vse the same with a good conscience and without offence to God. First of all this is to be helde as most certayne that Usurie condemned by the worde of God, is therfore unlawfull, prohibited and condemned because it is contrarie to the foundation which proceedeth from the lawe of charitie: that which thou wilt not haue done to thy selfe doe not thou to another. But that this our foundatiō is vnmoueable we haue declared before, where we haue layde the foundations of contracts and bargaines. For there we shewed that charitie is the scope and end of all dutie in this humane societie. Of this foundation an vnmoueable consequent is concluded, that no contract is condemned which is not repugnant to the charitie toward our neyghbour. Wherefore if any such can be shewed, it shalbe without doubt accounted lawfull, although it shall appeare much like vnto Usurie. For it is not iust and meete that we doe condemne al profitable contractes and bargaines in a common weale vnder a pretence of Usurie, because of the likenes. And although many such contracts are wisely condemned of the lawyers, yet we will speake of them of which the greatest controuersie is, especially in this realme. But that we may iudge of these contracts without error, and find out that which with a good conscience and without offending God it is lawfull to follow: it shall be needefull to speake of diuers sortes of men, that it may be vnderstand to whom we are bound to lend, and to whom we are not, for there Usurie is properly committed. Here the lawes of magistrates may determine of those thinges, which they shall wisely know to be good and profitable for their common weale. For this is to be marked as a profitable rule in the societie of man: that bargaynes allowed by the lawes and by the authoritie of the magistrate, that is, of a good and wise iudge or lawyer, are permitted to a christian man. For it is lawfull for a christian to vse ciuil

No bargain is disallowed, which is not contrarie to charitie.

A profitable rule concerning bargains

R.ii. ordinan-



cap 5 b

# A Commentarie vpon the

ordinances, & these ordināces are of force not only for reasons sake, but also because of the authority of y<sup>e</sup> magistrate. Let a christian man therfore so instruct his conscience, y<sup>e</sup> it may vnderstand y<sup>e</sup> these things are permitted, bicause God doth allow lawes and magistrates, and will haue vs to vse ciuill ordinances, and in bargaynes let him be content with that meane, with that equalitie, that the lawes and the magistrates doe appoynt, except they doe playnely varye from the ten commaundements and from the law of nature. This rule doth first admonish vs, that we do iudge reuerently of y<sup>e</sup> lawes and ordinances of a good magistrat. Secondly that we iudge not rashly & too sharply of y<sup>e</sup> bargaynes which the lawes do approue. Now, as we haue purposed let vs see y<sup>e</sup> orders and states of men. In the first state may be the poore and beggers, whiche being hindred with old age, or griened with sicknesse, or otherwise with some great calamitie oppressed, are not able to liue without the almes of other, no nor to make any gaine. To these we doe by bond owe the duties of charitie and almes. Therefore we must giue vnto these without al expectation of recompence or dutie agayne, for the commaundements sake of God, and for charities sake, which by nature we owe one to an other. And this dec is so necessary, that he that doth refuse to pay it, doth obstinately violate the commaundement of God, doth vngodly refuse to obey the precept of Christ, doth cruelly oppresse the members of Christ, doth wickedly reiect the lawe of charitie, and purchaseth vnto himselfe certayne destruction. Hereupon therfore it may easily be knowne, how necessarye a duty it is to giue almes, and to relieue with his abilitie those that doe in very deede stand in neede. But because I see that there are many causes by which the most parte are hindred, whereby they are not occupied in this necessary and dutiful office, as in many there is a studie of couetousnes, ignorance of the prouidence of God, heathenish diffidence,

The dutie of charity which we owe to the poore and impotent.

Diuers causes which hinder men that they are so slaeke in the necessary dutie of giuing almes.



Epistle of S. James.

cap 5<sup>o</sup> 6<sup>o</sup>

diffidence, riot, abuse of thinges, to much folly, much unprofitable spending, and (alas) cruel unmercifullnes in the most parte, whereby it commeth to passe that they are not moued with the neede of them that be in miserie: I will here somewhat at large handle the place of almes and that for this purpose, that both the necessitie of our dutye, whereby we are bound to them that neede in deede, may be vnderstand, and also we being admonished, may moze wyllingly and readly doe our dutie, and be made moze liberall toward the poore.

VWhy he purposeth to intreat of almes more at large.

First therefore I will shew where almes is to be giuen and what are the kindes therof.

VWhat chiefly poyntes he meaneth to handle concerning almes

Secondly I will rehearse the causes, with which the godly ought to be stirred by to giue almes.

Thirde I will note the affection of him that giueth almes, and I will also prescribe a maner and measure to be obserued in giuing almes.

Lastly I will intreate of the endes of almes which is godly bestowed, and of the fruite that commeth vnto them, that giue almes with a cherefull mind according to the commaundement of Christ.

Of Almes.

Who soeuer hath determined to giue almes, let him giue his almes in this order. First of all, let him be mercifull to himselfe, that is, let him giue the first almes to himselfe, which then is done when a man leauing his owne euill wayes, doth turne himselfe vnto the Lorde by true repentance. For no mercy (for so the word almes doth signifie) can be shewed of him, which as yet is not vnder the mercie of God. Wherefore Iesus the sonne of Syrach doth well admonishe when he sayth, Chap. 30. Haue mercie on thine owne soule pleasing God, and comfort thine heart: driue sorrowe farre from thee. When he sayth: Haue mercie on thy soule pleasing God, he sheweth in what thing that mercy doth consist, which we ought to

VVe must bestow the first almes vpon our selues.

VWhen the mercie consisteth which we ought to shew first to our owne selues.

R.iii.

shewe,

for rea  
gstrate.  
ence, h  
causa  
haue us  
to be  
content  
lames  
and  
lately  
ba  
n the  
law of  
we do  
indge  
magistrat.  
ply of  
bar  
as we  
hane  
In the  
first  
ing  
hinded  
erwise  
with  
to line  
with  
me. To  
these  
and  
almes,  
at al  
expecta  
commaunde  
which  
by na  
to necessary,  
early  
biolate  
stale  
to obey  
the  
members  
baritic,  
and  
m. Her  
recup  
necessary  
a  
his  
abilite  
But  
because  
e most  
parte  
this  
neces  
sarie  
of co  
heathen  
diffidenc



cap 5

# A Commentarie vpon the

shewe to our selues, to wit, in turning vnto God, and in  
 fayth, without which it is impossible to please God. After  
 this sort Abraham did begyn his almes, according to  
 whose example all the rest of the godly haue begun their  
 almes at them selues. To this pertayneth that saying of  
*Augustine*: If thou wilt giue almes, begyn at thy selfe.  
 For howe can he be mercifull to another which is cruell  
 to himselfe? He that hath begon his almes after this ma-  
 ner, will forthwith turne himselfe to his neighbour, and  
 will shewe mercy vnto him. Herevpon riseth the first di-  
 stinction of almes, that there is one kynde of almes which  
 euery one bestoweth vpon himselfe, which is by nature  
 the former, another which euery man giueth to other,  
 which is by nature the latter. Nowe this latter may also  
 be made to be of two sortes, one spirituall, another ciuill.  
 That which is spirituall, pertayneth to the spirite, which  
 he bestoweth, which calleth him into the right way that  
 erreth from the folde of Christ, and bringeth him into  
 Christes shewe. There is no almes moze diuine than  
 this, none moze profitable, finally, none moze necessarie.  
 For as the soule doth excell the bodie, so almes whereby  
 the soule is refreshed, is by many degrees to be preferred  
 before the almes with which the necessities of this frayle  
 bodie are relieued, and as eternall good things are moze  
 to be esteemed than all the commodities of this lyfe which  
 continue but a short time: so the almes which helpeth to  
 the attayning of eternall life, is moze to be esteemed, than  
 the almes that serueth for this frayle life. There is great  
 commendation hereof in *James the Apostle*, who sayth:  
*James. 5. 19. 20.* Brethren, if any of you hath erred from the truth, and some  
 man hath conuerted him, let him knowe that he which hath  
 conuerted the sinner from going astray out of his way, shall  
 saue a soule from death, & shal hyde a multitude of sins. Ci-  
 uill almes doth belong to this present lyfe, to wit, when  
 we being touched with pitie, doe succour the neede of the  
 poore.

The first di-  
stinction of  
almes.

Two kindes  
of almes  
which is be-  
stowed vpon  
other.

Spirituall al-  
mes what it  
is, how diuine  
and passing al  
other kinds of  
almes.

Ciuill almes  
what it is.



Epistle of S. James.

cap 5 26

poore. To eyther kynde of mercie Christ doth exhorte vs by the example of his father, when he sayth: *Be ye mercifull, as your heauenly father also is mercifull.* Luke. 6. 36 Let euery one remember this pzecept, which acknowledgeth Christ for his maister.

The causes with which the godlye ought to be stirred by to giue almes, are very many, among which these are the chiefe. The first cause is Christianitie it selfe, or the profession of Christian religion. For this doth require, that we abounde in euerye good worke, and that we embrace and cherishe one another as the members of one body, the head whereof is Christ. When this is done of faith in Christ, we doe, in the feare of God practize true christianitie, that is, we do truly imitate the diuine nature. For seeing God, whom christianitie biddeth vs follow, is rich in mercy, we by following his mercy are after a loze sayde to be followers of the diuine nature. But they that are not occupied in this following, doe falsly attribute to themselues a christian name. Furthermoze they are not counted the lawfull sonnes of God but bastardes rather. For God acknowledgeth none among his sonnes, but whom he seeth at the least to endeuour to imitate his fathers vertues. To this pertayneth that saying of the Lord in the Prophet. *If I be a father where is mine honour?* But the cheefest parte of honour, which childzen can doe to their parents, is to imitate their vertues. Whosoever earnestly looketh for the glorye of christianitie, let him set befoze himselfe this cause of shewing mercy to his neighbour, and let him not suffer himselfe to be led away with euil examples from this necessary and due worship of God.

The first cause yea and that most weighty which ought to stire vp all christians to be diligent in giuing almes.

Malac. 1. 6.

The second cause is the commaundement of God, vnto which all creatures ought to obey. Of this cause Iesus the sonne of Sirach maketh mention. *chap. 29: Helpe the poore for the commandements sake, and turne him not away*

The second cause which ought to moue vs to the giuing of almes.

R. iiii.

because

and in  
God. After  
coming to  
begin their  
at saying of  
at thy selfe.  
th is cruell  
for this ma-  
ghour, and  
th the first  
almes which  
is by nature  
eth to other,  
we may also  
another euill.  
Spirite, which  
ghe way that  
geth him into  
the diuine than  
we necessarye.  
times whereby  
to be preferred  
of this fraile  
ings are moze  
this life which  
which helpeth to  
extremes, than  
There is great  
le, who sayth:  
truth, and some  
be which bar  
his way, shall  
ale of sins. Ci  
to wit, when  
the neede of the  
poore.



cap 5. 66

## A Commentarie vpon the

because of his pouertie. And a little after: Bestow thy treasure after the commaundement of the most high, and it shall bring thee more profite then Gold. Our treasure that doth neuer fayle we must lay vp and keepe in heauen, but yet it is in this life bestowed vpon the poore, vpon whom the benefites that he bestowed the Lord so accepteth as if we had bestowed them vpon himselfe. All the testimonies of the Scripture which doe commend vnto vs the loue of our neighbour, doe require especially liberalitie towarde the needie. For this is the chiefe part of true loue. Hereunto belongeth that saying of the Lord, Deut. 15. I commaund thee, saying, thou shalt open thine hand vnto thy brother that is needy. He that contemneth this precept of the Lord, how can he loue God? how can he feare him? for thus sayth Iohn: Whosoever hath this worldes good, and seeth his brother haue neede, and shutteth vp his compassion from him, how dwelleth the loue of God in him? And Iob 6. He that taketh away mercie from his neighbour, hath forsaken the feare of the Lord. Whosoever therefore determineth to loue God and to feare him from his heart, let him thinke that he doth owe obedience to God commaunding. Of which thing Micheas speaketh after this sort: I will shew thee, O man, what is good, and what the Lord requireth of thee, surely to doe iustly, and to loue mercy and to humble thy selfe to walke with thy God.

He cannot rightly feare the Lorde which is not mercifull to the poore. 1. Iohn. 3. 17.

The third cause which ought to prouoke vs to be liberal in giuing aimes.

The thirde cause is the imitation of examples, of Christ our Lord first, and then of his members. Christ was made poore for vs, that he might enrich vs. What therefore do we agayne, owe to the members of Christ? especially seeing he witnesseth that that is done to himselfe whatsoeuer we doe to the least of his members. Matth. 25. The holy fathers desired nothing moze than to relieue the poore Saints. Abraham doth reuerence strangers, and biddeth them to eate with him, that he may shewe liberalitie vnto them. Lot desired the Angels to come into his house, whom



Epistle of S. James.

cap 5 v 8

whom he thought to be poore straungers. Cornelius the courtier is written to haue giuen himselfe to continuall prayer and almes, which the scripture witnesseth to haue come by into remembrance before God.

The fourth cause is the dignitie and estimation of almes godly bestowed before God. *Prouerb. 21. To do mercie and iudgement is more acceptable to the Lorde then sacrifice.* Christ sayth *Matth. 9. I will haue mercie and not sacrifice.* *Heb. 13. To doe good and to distribute forget not: for with such sacrifice God is pleased.* So great dignitie, so great estimation is there before God, of the almes godly bestowed. It is preferred before sacrifice: God is sayd to be singularly moued and delighted therewith. This dignitie ought worthily to admonithe them which abounde in this worldes good, that they indenuour, according to the counsell of Paule, to be rich in good workes.

The fourth cause which ought to stirre vs vp diligently to distribute our almes to the poore.

Almes rightly bestowed is a thing much accepted and esteemed before God.

The fift cause is our neighbour himselfe. But that euery man is neighbour one to another, the Parable of the Samaritane doth teach, although this neighbourhode is greater with some than with other some. Euery man both godly and also vngodly is neighbour vnto me, and that first by reason of our creation. Secondly for likenes sake. Thirdly in respect of our common life and humane societie. And although this triple bonde wherewith men are bounde among themselues, is a great cause wherefore men ought to doe good vnto men: neuertheless there is yet a farre greater bonde wherewith Christians are knit together with Christians. For first one vocation is common to all Christians, whereby we are called to the vnitie of spirit in the bonde of peace. Agayne, by the same spirit we are begotten agayne to be the sonnes of God, whereby it commeth to passe that both we haue one father which is God, and also we are brethren among our selues. Moreouer, we are members of the same mysticall bodye, the heade whereof is Christ. Finally, we haue the same hope

The fift cause of giuing almes.

A triple bond wherewith all men are ioyned in neighbourhoode one with another.

Other exceeding neare bonds wherewith Christians are knit together, which also ought not a little to moue vs vnto liberal almes toward our needy brethren.

S. i.

of

by trea  
and is shal  
e that doth  
en, but yet it  
on whom the  
teeth as if we  
strenomes of  
the loue of  
dignitie toward  
loue. He come  
nt. 15. I com  
vnto thy bra  
precepte of the  
care him: for  
willes good, and  
his compassion  
him? And Job  
ighbour, hath  
therefore de  
from his heart,  
e to God com  
theth after this  
l, and what the  
ad to loue mercy  
ed.  
mples, of Christ  
Christ was made  
hat therefore do  
e especially se  
like what somer  
e. 25. The holy  
me the poore  
s, and hideth  
her alitie vnto  
nto his house,  
lygom



cap 40

## A Commentarie vpon the

of the glorie to come, for we are heyres of eternall lyfe in Christ Iesus our Lorde. If we doe earnestly thinke vpon this fift cause of mercie towarde our neighbour, there is none that doth not acknowledge howe necessarily liberalitie is to be shewed to them that be in neede. I do not make mention of that bond by which al men in this worlde are debtors one to another. Who wil seme to be a contemner of the vnitie of the spirite, whereunto the Gospell calleth vs? Who can abide to heare that he is a denier of spirituall brotherhoode? Who dare so despyse the members of Christ, that he will suffer them to be tormented wyth colde, hunger, and nakednesse? Who will not worthily suffer him to be partaker with him of the things of this worlde which soone fade awaye, whom he assuredly thinketh shall be heyre with him of the heauenly treasures? If this cause of liberalitie and mercie were esteemed of many according to the worthinesse thereof, they woulde not set their mindes so much vpon deceyte and vniust gayne, they woulde not so much spoyle and rob the needie members of Christ, and they would thinke moze of cherishing and making much of their owne fleche. As often as we see any that is in miserie crauing our helpe and succour, let vs, I pray you, remember the saying of *Esay*: *Hide not thy selfe from thine owne flesh.*

*Esay. 58.7.*

The sixt cause that ought to moue vs to giue almes, is the fundrye punishments which shall light vpon them that are vmercifull towarde the poore.

The sixt cause is the punishment, yea and that manifold of them which are hard toward the poore. The first is the wrath of God, *Ecclesiasticus 4. Turne not thine eyes aside from the poore, because of anger.* The second is the curse. In the same place it is sayd: *For if he curse thee in the bitternes of his soule, his prayer shall be heard of him that made him.* The third is the refusing of thy prayer which thou makest in thy necessitie. *Prouerb. 21. He that stoppeth his eare at the crying of the poore, he shall also crye and not be heard.* A horrible punishment truly, then which none can be moze grieuous; and it is no maruel that he

is



Capit. 11. 5

Epistle of S. James. 66

is not heard of God, which doth not heare the Sonne of God crying in his members. The fourth is a depriuing them of their gites. For it is witten: From him that hath not, euen that he hath shalbe taken away. But he is sayde not to haue, which doth not vse his gites and goods to the glozie of God, and the relieuing of them that be in miserie. To this pertaineth that saying, Prouerb. 3. He that despiseth the prayer of the poore shall suffer pouertie. The fift is the begging of their childezen, or their most wicked life which is farre more grieuous then all neede and pouertie. I haue spoken of the punishments of them that are cruell toward the poore, and that not out of philosophie which may erre, but out of the verye oracles of God, which cannot deceite or lye. He that shall contemne these, shall in short time finde a iust iudge. Now we will speake of affection, of what sort we require it to be in him which hath purposed to giue almes, and of the due and conuenient maner of almes. Christ will haue two vtces to be excluded from almes *Matth. 6.* which are hypocrisie and vaine glozie. For these two doe as pernicious poplons, infect whatsoeuer they touch. Neyther is that any maruel. For where hypocrisie is, there is no sayth: where vaine glozie is, there is no loue of God, no feare of God. Let therefore pharisaicall Hypocrisie and foolish boasting be farre of from our almes. What affections then do you require in almes: loue of God, charitie of our neighbour, syncere gentlenesse and cherefulnesse. For with these affections as with a certaine heauenly salt, our almes ought to be sprinkled, whereby it ought to be a sacrifice acceptable to God. Furthermore, with almes sayth is to be ioyned, by which we doe not only assure our selues that our almes doth please God, but also that he hath a care ouer our whole lyfe, that he doth furnishe vs with necessary defence and liuing. And bicause he requireth that we should helpe others, and hath promised rewardes, we shall for

S.ii,                      Gods

*Matth. 25. 29.*

Two things diligently to be taken hede of in giuing almes.

What affections ought to be in him that bestoweth almes.

all lyfe  
make up  
our there  
larly lye.  
I do not  
this world  
a content  
dozell cal  
emer of h  
e members  
ented with  
t worship  
ngs of this  
wedly thin  
calures: If  
med of ma  
woulde not  
with gayne,  
needie men  
of cherishing  
ira as we see  
d succour, let  
by: Hide not  
that manifo  
we first is the  
me eyes aside  
is the curle.  
e thee in the  
d of him that  
paper which  
e bar it ap  
all also eye  
then which  
mel th at he  
is



cap 5. 16

## A Commentarie vpon the

Gods sake bestowe benefices, and agayne by fayth looke for the help of God. In y maner of our almes we shall consider the quantitie, according to the counsel of Tobias, who sayth: *If thou hast much, giue plenteously, if thou hast little, doe thy diligence gladly to giue of that little*: Equalitie, that thou of bounden dutie doe bestowe thy almes on the needy, and he agayne with a thankful minde receyue it and wishe well vnto thee: Readynes of mynde, according to that saying of Paule. 2. Cor. 8. *If there be a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not*. Difference of strangers and them that be of the housholde of fayth, according to the counsell of Paul Gal. 6. *While we haue time, let vs do good vnto all men, but especially vnto them, which are of the housholde of fayth, that is, them which by fayth are in the same familie of God that we be*: Possession, according to the saying of Salomon: *Let thy fountaines flow forth, but be thou maister of them*.

Quantitie in almes how to be considered. Tob. 4. 9.

Equalitie in almes.

Readines and chearefulness in giuing almes.

Vpon whome especially almes is to be bestowed.

Prouer. 5. 16.

The endes of godly almes are foure.

2. Cor. 9. 8.

Nowe it remaineth that we speake of the endes of godly almes, and of the fruite thereof. And although both the endes, and also the fruite of holy almes may easily be gathered of those things which go before, yet that I maye the moze stirre by the godly reader to this necessarie, holy, and dutifull office, I will adde somewhat of the endes and fruites of almes godly bestowed. The ends are foure: The first, the relieuing of our needy neighbour, and the refreshing of the members of Christ. The seconde, the prouoking of others to liberalitie toward the poore, according to that saying: 2. Cor. 9. *Your Zeale hath prouoked many*. The thirde, the witnessing of our fayth and of the feare of God. For the duties of charitie are directed vnto this ende, that by them we doe witness that we feare God, whose commaundement we obey. The fourth, the glorie of God. Diuers and manifolde fruites do followe liberalitie towardes the poore. Paule witnesseth that it will come



comp 5 v. 5

Epistle of S. James. 67

come to passe that they which haue bene liberall and bountifull towards the poore, shall abounde in euerye good worke. For so it pleaseth the Lorde to recompence obedience towards him with newe graces. And this is it which the Lord sayth *Matth. 6. The Lord shall reward thee openly.* And *Psal. Blessed is he that iudgeth wisely of the poore: Psal. 41. 1. the Lorde shall deliuer him in the time of trouble. Salomon: He that hath mercie vpon the poore, lendeth vnto the Lorde. Prouer. 19. 17.* Paule sayth: *He that soweth liberally shall reape also liberally. Esay. 58. If thou poure out thy soule to the hungry, and refresh the troubled soule: then shall thy light spring out in the darkenesse, and thy darkenesse shall be as the noone day. Ecclesiasticus. 29. Lay vp thine almes in thy secret chambers, and it shall keepe thee from all affliction, it shall fight for thee against thine enimie, better than the shielde of a strong man, or speare of the mightie.* Here the wise man calleth the necessities of our neighbours secret chambers, in which benefites are to be layde by and kept, wherevpon one of the holy fathers hath sayde elegantlye and well: the hande of the poore is a treasure house of Christ. Then the wyle man addeth the exceeding great fruite of the bounteousnesse layde by in those secret chambers to be deliuerance from euils, and a most strong fortresse and defence agaynst our enimies. For a man can by nothing be moze defended & protected agaynst perils, than by bounteousnes & mercie. But I speake of y almes which proceedeth of fayth, as it sufficiently appeareth by those thinges that I haue before spoken, least that any man think that I agree with the Papistes, which value their almes without Christ, and without fayth. These things concerning liberall and godly almes, I thought therfore to adde, that I might admonishe especially them that are of the richer sort, of their dutie, that they may vnderstande that they are bounde by the lawe of God to bestow part of their substance vpon the poore, and that freely for the commandments

S.iii. dementis

locke  
all con-  
tin, who  
in heil li-  
Equali-  
almes on  
receyue it  
according  
e a willing  
ab, and not  
angers and  
ding to the  
de good  
are of the  
ayth are in  
according  
in forb, but  
  
ndes of god-  
ugh both the  
easily be ga-  
that I maye  
ecessarie, he-  
of the endes  
is are foure:  
our, and the  
seconde, the  
poore, accor-  
ab prouided  
y and of the  
directed into  
fears God,  
h, the glozie  
the libera-  
that it will  
come



cap. 5. v. 6

## A Commentarie vpon the

dements sake of God, and for many other causes which I haue rehearsed. Furthermore that, if they shall refuse to obey the commaundement of God, they may know that they are gilty of disobedience towards God. Of these thinges that is playnly concluded which I propounded, to wit, that none may without great sacrilege take gaine of this \* first kind of men. In the second order or state of men I place artificers, and those which get their liuing with the labour of their handes. To these, according to the precept of Christ, we must lend, and looke for nothing a-gayne. For as the Apostle forbiddeth to giue vnto these freely when he sayth: *He that laboureth let him eat.* As charitie dooth not require that we shoulde giue of our goods freely to them that are strong and able to labour: so if necessitie vrging them, they desire to borowe any thing of thee, obey the rule of Christ and lend without looking for a recompence in the like or in any other kind of dutye. The reason of the rule is, because that they, which in the sweate of their browes and in the labour of their handes doe gette their liuing, are wont to gaine little more then their liuing and their clothing. If such therfore should be grieued with Usurie, they should be plainly oppressed, not without the greate hurt of common weales and families, and so the foundation of the contractes and bargaines which we haue layd befoze, should be vtterlye ouerthrowne. But I cannot with silence passe ouer what I iudge most iustly to be found fault with in this kind of men. For beside that many of this sorte of men doe seeme to haue cast aside the feare of God, I iudge thre most grieuous vices to be restrained in them, which are: more then barbarous drincking, excesse of apparrell altogether vnmette for this kind of men, and fraude and false dealing in their workmanship and labour. Many artificers & workmen, whatsoeuer they gayne the whole weeke, this on the holy dayes they spend in drincking, hauing no regarde of their

\* That is, such as eyther through po- uertie, age, or for some o- ther cause are not able to helpe them- selues.

How we must behaue our selues in lending to arti- ficers and Labourers.

Three great faults in many artificers and labourers.

The first fault founde in arti- ficers and workmen.



Epistle of S. James.

comp. 5. 12/5

their silly wyues or of their pooze childezen. Whereby it falleth out, that artificers and workemen doe more often want, and are more often constraigned to borow. If such were restrayned by lawes and by punishment, it should be better provided not onely for them but also for the common weale. If any thing be remainning more then wil suffice for their drinking, this they turne into excesse of apparell. For a man may see often times a peltmonger or a shoemaker or some other craftes man to be more finely appareled, then a Knight hath bene when I was a childe, when as yet the noble vertue of our auncetors was in any estimation. They are not contented with common cloth, which was very much set by among our elders, but they imitating noble men and princes, doe seeke for garments of silke. And they whose abilitie doth not permit that, doe regard the hemmes of their sleeues and skirts of their garments with cleane silke, that as by a certayne signe or token they may bewray the pride of their mind. Here I iudge the magistrate to offend most grievously which doth not restrayne this lightnes with lawes and punishment. Here perhaps wil rise by agaynst me some prating workman & will except after this sort: What? is it not lawfull for me to vse my owne thinges as it shall please me? am I not maister of mine owne thinges? A seemelines is to be kept in euery kind of life, wherfore it is in no wise lawfull for thee to abuse thy thinges contrary to that which becometh thee, which if thou shalt do, it is the dutye of the magistrate, that he do correct thee & teach thee what kind of apparell doth become a shoemaker or a peltmonger. Thou thinkest that thou art made more trimme and commendable befoze men with thy ornaments of silke: but wise men doe iudge farre otherwise of thee. For of the excesse of apparell they do gather an excessiue and a riotous minde. What shall I say of the fraude and falsse dealing of workemen? what of their newe colours, wherwith they

The seconde fault.

He speaketh not of our countrie Eng-lande, but of his owne countrie Denmarke, whether the same may be sayde of our countrie, that I leaue to the iudgement of others.

An obiection.

The aunfwer.

The thirde fault in many artificers and workemen,

S.iiii.

doe

which I  
refuse to  
know that  
These  
pounded,  
take gaine  
of state of  
their living  
ording to the  
in working  
into these  
his rate. As  
grue of our  
to labourer  
howe anye  
without loo-  
other kind of  
they, which  
house of their  
to gaine little  
such therfore  
be plainly op-  
mmon weales  
intraces and  
uld be better  
asse over what  
in this kind of  
men doe seeme  
the most grie-  
ere: more then  
altogether un-  
alle dealing in  
fers & work-  
; this on the  
to regarde of  
their



comp 5. 66

## A Commentarie vpon the

doe paynt and set forth their workes? who doth not com-  
playne of the deceit of artificers and workemen? Let me  
speake somewhat moze freely what I thinke. In euery  
kinde of trade they haue a gods name, their ouerseers af-  
ter the maner of the auncient *Athenians*. But what I  
pray you, doe these ouerseers? there are perhaps some a-  
mong the, which, that they may receiue part of the gaine  
or may get of them those thinges that are necessarie for  
them at a lower price: will winke at many faultes of the  
workemen (which they ought to correct, if they woulde  
rightly execute the office of ouerseers) hauing litle re-  
gard of the helth of the body, that is of the common weale.  
It is the dutie therfoze of wise gouernoures, that they  
bring into order both the artificers them selues and also  
their ouerseers or assistents. That which I haue sayde of  
Shoomakers and peltmongers, I will haue to be vnder-  
stand of all workemen and labourers whose occupation  
and practise is necessarye in the common weale.

Very vniust  
vsury practi-  
zed among  
husbandmen.

In the third order or state of men may husbandmen be  
placed, who also doe get their liuing with the labours of  
their handes. If these did there dutie in the feare of God,  
and tilled the earth diligently, truly they should lesse stand  
in neede, especially they which haue but small fields. For  
the earth which they labour doth render with increase  
that which it receiueth, so as the labour of the husband  
man be watered with the feare of the Lord. Among this  
kind of men most vniust Usurie is bled, and such Usurie  
truly as the Turkes and other prophane heathen woulde  
without dout abhorre. Some man peraduenture boroweth  
a quarter of graine in the time of sowing, but with a co-  
uenant, that eyther he restore the same double at the  
yeares end to him of whom he borowed it, or els that he  
some of his owne charges freely so much as he borowed.  
I speake not of the vsurie of money, which is farre moze  
vniust then the former. It behoueth the godly magistrate

to



cap 5. 69  
*Epistle of S. James.*

to correct this vniustice, and it is the dutie of godly pa-  
stours to prouoke the husbandmen to doe pleasures and  
good turnes one to another without all vsurie in the feare  
of the Loyde, and to paynt out that cursed vsurie in it co-  
lours, that they maye learne to eschue it as a certayne  
plague or pestilence. I woulde wishe also in this state of  
men both excelle of apparell to be restrayned, and also un-  
profitable expences at mariages, and at the birch of their  
chilozen. For it is wont oftentimes to come to passe that  
they are destitute of things necessarie, which forgetting  
the maner of their state, doe not keepe a meane.

In the fourth state of men may be placed nice and deli-  
cate yong men, of whome *Horace* writeth in this maner: Nice and deli-  
cate yong  
men.

*The yong man not yet ripe in yeares,  
from keeper once set free:  
Doth set delight in horse and dogges,  
and in greene fieldes to be:  
Soone led to vice, is sharpe to them  
that warne him as his frends:  
For profite slowly doth prouide,  
in waste his mony spendes.  
Is loftie eke and couetous,  
and soone doth that forsake:  
Which he once loued, and wherein  
his pleasure he did take.*

To this order therefore I thought good to adde the wel-  
thier yong men, which are not yet married, whether they  
be noble, or the sonnes of citizens, who being nowe set  
free from their tutoz & gouernours of their maners, are  
caried more freely according to the lust of their minde. It  
often falleth out with these, by reason of their prodigall  
spending of things (for it is wont to come to passe for the  
most part, that they which are borne vnto welch, or come  
easily by it, are more wastfull of their things) doe desire  
to borowe money of others. But how we must deale with  
these

*C. i.*



cap 5 *W* 6  
A Commentarie vpon the

these I will declare, when I shall first shewe what I finde wanting in them, & what I would haue to be reformed in the. Although I feare y<sup>e</sup> the same wil happen to me, which in time past chaunced to the Hares that gaue lawes to the lions, neuertheles y<sup>e</sup> truth is to be preferred before al peril. If it not a few which are of good towardnes are marred with euil bringing vp, & get those vices from the ir tender yeares, which all their age after doe for the most part accompanye them. For whē parents do eyther too much coccker their children, or by their owne example allure them to naughtinesse, or neglect due instruction, what other thing, I pray you, can come to passe, than which we see in trees, which from the beginning being neglected, become crooked and unfruitfull. Contrariwise, they that are pruned, erected and watered with the hande and cunning of the husbande man, are made streight, fertile, and frutesfull. But howe much it skilleth to accustome from tender yeares, *Lycurgus* taught his *Lacedemonians* by this example: he tooke in hand to bring vp two whelps which came of the same syre and damme, of which one he suffered to be pampered and well fedde, the other he applied to hunting. These thus brought vp, he brought vnto the commū theater or stage of the *Lacedemonians*, and placed them in the middest thereof, and togither in the sight of the whelps he set a pot of fleshe and a liue Hare. This being done, he let them both lose, the *Lacedemonians* beholding him, of which the one with great behemencie runneth after the Hare, the other thrusteth his heade into the flesh pot. But when the *Lacedimonians* marueyled, what this sight did meane, *Lycurgus* aunswereth: both these whelpes came of the same syre and damme, but you see the one giuen to the belly, the other to be delighted with hunting. This diuers disposition is long of the bringing vp. Know ye therefore, O ye *Lacedemonians*, that the maner of lyfe, education, and custome, are of great importance to vertue. The  
ancient

Ill bringing vp is a cause of marring many, which are of a good towards and wir.

An apt similitude.

How much bringing vp preuaileth either vnto vertue or vice it is declared by an excellent example.







cap 5<sup>66</sup>

A Commentarie vpon the

good educa-  
tion.

The difcom-  
moditie of e-  
uill bringing  
vp is properly  
shewed.

spent vpon horse breakers, or horse keepers, fooles, minstrels, dogs, &c. that they thinke wel bestowed, but if they see any thing to be spent about instructing their childe, they thinke all that yll bestowed, and are much more carefull that an horse be wel framed to haunting and leaping, than that their childe be well instructed to vertue. *Plutarch* declareth a very goodly hystorie making hereunto: *Aristippus*, sayth he, being demaunded of a certayne foolish father howe great a rewarde he woulde aske for instructing his sonne, answered, a thousande grottes. This aunswere being hearde, the father with indignation cryeth out: O good God, sayth he, I can buye a bondman or slaue for a thousande grottes, to whom *Aristippus*: buy, sayth he, a bondman, and so thou shalt haue two bondmen, both the seruant whom thou hast bought, and the chylde whom thou hast begot: signifying that the mindes of childe, honest discipline being neglected, doe become seruite, and open vnto all naughtinesse. For the Poet truly sayth:

*The vntild and neglected field,  
the fruiteles fearne for fruite doth yelde.*

For so it is altogether, if thou leaue a field vntilled, thou shalt find it to haue plentifully brought forth fearne and thistles: after the same sort, if thou shalt leaue the wites of childe vnlooked vnto and vnercised, thou shalt reape most abundant fruite of wantonnes and vngraciousnes. We haue what be the beginniges of vnbredid and wanton youth, wherevnto after ward come the verpe euill examples of them which are taught after the same maner. What other thing I praye you, can be looked for here, then that which is reported of a certayne kinde of chalkie clay, which as *Plinie* saith, hath so great affinitie with the fire, that the flame doth passe vnto ic from what place soeuer it be seene: for whatsoeuer vice is in others whose acquaintance they vse, this commeth vpon them as a certayne



Epistle of S. James.

Comp 5 6 6

tayne flame, and if there be any vertue left, it consumeth  
 it, so greate a nourishing of all naughtines and vnbrideled  
 sensualitie is the acquaintance and conuersation of euill  
 men. In this felowship, vertue being banished they begin  
 to strue who shall passe other in pleasure. Here it is a  
 goodly thing to contend in drinke and to ouercome. It  
 is thought to be greater glozie not to be ouercome in  
 quaffing, then valiantly to driue backe the enemy. They  
 that ouercome in this struiuing are no lesse praised then  
*Achilles* was in time past, because he ouercam *Hector* in a  
 singular combat. Briefly, according to the saying of *Clay*,  
 they shew them selues men in drunkenesse, and so they  
 carie away the spoiles of *Sarmacis* without bloude and  
 sweat. There is also an other kind of struiuing wherin one  
 contendeth to ouercome an other in vanitie, in strāgenes,  
 in price and excelle of apparell. Here when none wilbe  
 the last, O good God, what vnprofitable expences are  
 made? as this struiuing is exceeding gainefull to mar-  
 chantes: so is it a most ready way to empty the purses of  
 vnwise men. I say nothing of other struiuing not worthy  
 to be remembred, vnto which there are no small charges  
 required. What at the last will here come to passe? their  
 purses being emptied, they runne vnto their friends, they  
 desire to borowe mony, that nothing may be wanting to  
 the souldiers of *Epicure*. Here if any denie that which is  
 asked, he getteth vnto himselfe an enemy, if he lende, he  
 addeth oyle to fire. What, I pray you, must a godly man  
 doe here? ought he to giue mony freely vnto these, or  
 ought he to lende it them? No wise man will giue it free-  
 ly, because almes is due not to riot, not to drinke, not to  
 dyce, &c. but to necessitie. Parents and kinsmen which  
 will seeme here to be more liberall, and do minister mony  
 which is the instrument of naughtines, to them y aske it,  
 doe as it were reach a sword vnto a mad man. Ought they  
 to lende these any thing? No truly. For thou art bounde

Contending  
 who shall  
 passe one an  
 other in quaf-  
 fing and  
 drunkenness.

Contending  
 in vanitie and  
 excelle of ap-  
 parell.

How we must  
 behaue our  
 selues in len-  
 ding to them  
 which are  
 prodigall and  
 riotous.

To lend a pro-  
 digall man  
 money is to  
 reach a sword  
 in to a madde  
 mans hand.

C.iii. by

les, min-  
 out if they  
 children,  
 more care  
 and leaping,  
 Plu-  
 hereunto;  
 certayne too-  
 al he for in-  
 grotes. This  
 gnation cry-  
 a bondman  
 Hippus: buy,  
 a two bond-  
 ght, and the  
 at the mindes  
 doe become  
 for the Poet  
  
 yelde.  
 vntilled, thou  
 thy feare and  
 we the wiles of  
 an shalt reape  
 migracionis.  
 dled and wun-  
 berpe cull ex-  
 same maner,  
 uoked for here,  
 mode of chahie  
 affinitie with  
 in what place  
 others whose  
 hem as a cer-  
 rone



cap. 5. 66

## A Commentarie vpon the

¶ We must not  
lend money to  
prodigal per-  
sons.

by no lawe neyther of God, nor of nature nor of man to lend money to them, which abuse it to their owne destruction, yea thou doost not a little offend if thou doe it. For he that hath giuen an occasion of losse, seemeth to haue giuen the losse, wherefore he is made gilty of an other mans fault, as though his owne proper burthen were not enough for him. For when these nice and delicate yong men doe find where they may readily borow money vpon Usurie, they spend more prodigally, till their substance being quite wasted they be brought vnto pouertie not without shame and reproch to the familie whereof they come. Wherefore sithence it is profitable also to the common weale that honest and especially noble and auncient families be mayntained, he doth not a little offend against the common weale, who by lending doth giue occasion of vetter decay of honest families. Wherefore let a wise and godly man be nothing moued with the offence of these light men, neither let him communicate with other mens faultes, neither let him giue occasion of greater spending, but let him feare God rather and helpe them by lending vnto them, whom the Lorde commaundeth to be holpen.

¶ Vnto the first order or sort of men they may be referred, which are come to their full and perfect age, whose studie of life the Poet describeth in these verses.

*The manly minde and age now ripe,  
olde studies doth forsake:  
And frendship, welth and honour eke,  
to get it meanes doth make.*

¶ What men of full and perfect age are most commonly enclined vnto.

These leauing the fond toys of youth, as the Poet witnesseth, are occupped with newe studies: they seeke riches, they desire frendship, they are tickled with honour. ¶ Who if they would enter into a iust trade of life, and call their libertie to an account, they should haue sufficient to mayntaine their state. But they being not contented with their



cap 5. 85

their meane state doe seeke after higher matters, and ha-  
 uing no regard of the meanes of their calling they streyne  
 them selues to doe greater thinges then their abilitie doth  
 beare. Such therfore whē as they are destitute of fethers,  
 neuertheles they enterprise to striue with the egle in fly-  
 ing: they had neede some otherwhere to borrow fethers,  
 which they them selues haue not at home. What I praye  
 you, is more fond or foolish then these? what is more un-  
 advised or rashe? they see other much richer then them-  
 selues to weare costly garments. What doe our countrype  
 men heare? y they may not seme lesse noble thē they, they  
 desire to borrow mony vpon Usurie, that they may haue  
 wherby they may maintaine and increase their braverie.  
 They maruel at the sumptuous houses of others, in which  
 thing when they will not giue place to them that are of  
 the richer sorte, they must by all meanes seeke to get mo-  
 ney wherby they may build the like houses. Should they  
 not doe much better if measuring themselves by their  
 owne foote, they did prepare a nest fit and agreable for  
 themselves and for their chickens? Were it not a ridicu-  
 lous thing if the Larke seing the nest of the Swanne,  
 should make an account that the like were to be prepared  
 for her selfe. There is reported a very pretie saying of  
 Frances King of the Frenchmen concerning the house of  
 a certayne noble man builded and set forth sumptuouslye  
 and after a princely sort. For when as the King was  
 brought into the house, and the noble man did looke for the  
 Kinges boyte concerning the sumptuousnes of the build-  
 ing: at the last the King being asked his iudgement of  
 the house, answered, that all things were faire and sump-  
 tuous, but that it was to greate a nest for so little a hyde.  
 The King did very well truly and sufficient wittily in  
 fewe wordes reprehend the folly of the man, and also by  
 his answer admonished, that it behoueth every man to  
 abide within the limites of his state and calling, be-

We must not  
 presume a-  
 boue our abi-  
 litie.

A worthy sai-  
 ing of Frances  
 King of the  
 frenchmen,  
 wherein is  
 shewed that  
 we must  
 not goe  
 beyond the li-  
 mites of our  
 state

C.iiii.

pond

of man to  
 be destruc-  
 tion. For  
 meth to haue  
 te of an other  
 then were not  
 delicate yong  
 money vpon  
 substance be-  
 erie not with-  
 of they come,  
 to the common  
 ancient fami-  
 nd against the  
 occasion of vt-  
 let a wife and  
 ffence of these  
 with other men  
 eater spending,  
 hem by lending  
 worth to be hol-  
 may be referred,  
 ge, which studie  
 th, as the boel  
 eyes: they seeke  
 to with honour,  
 of life, and call  
 ne sufficient to  
 contented with  
 their



cap 5. b

# A Commentarie vpon the

pond or beside which nothing can well consist.

He describeth  
at large the  
presumptuous  
prodigalitie  
of diuers of  
his owne  
country men  
the Danes,  
but all other  
whofoeuer  
that be in the  
same fault,  
may be ther-  
by also admon-  
ished.

They doe furthermore behold others to weare great chaynes of gold as tokens of their nobilitie and auctoritie to whom if they be not made like euen in this thing, they thinke that there honour is ill prouided for. What must they needes doe heare? their abilitie is moze slender then that it doth suffize to bye so costly and grate chaynes: wherfore they must seke to borow gold some other where, for which eyther their fermes are to be morgaged, or money is to be borowed vpon vsurie. For no man giueth vnto them freely, no man ought to lend them for naught. For free lending, as Christ witnesseth is due only to them that neede, Ecclesiasticus. 29. Lend vnto thy neighbour in the time of his neede. Here the wise man doth playnly re- straine the dutie of lending vnto the time of neede. Here- vpon it falleth out that sometimes their rents are scarce sufficient to pay the vsurie. The husband first wearing a chayne doth in bayne desire the friendly countenance of his wife, before shee also be adozned with chaynes and o- ther innumerable ornaments. Then the daughters seking to haue the like triuming and decking that their mother hath, doe not ceasse to prouoke their father by intreatie, till they also weare chaynes.

They see mozeouer in the families of great personages noble and honourable furniture, in which thing they doe not suffer themselues to be the last. Here gilded cuppes, costly wynges, precious hanginges of houses and sumptu- ous ornaments must be gotten. These thinges being got- ten, great feasts are made that this excellencie and bzaue- rie may be knowne vnto others. There are also in this sort of men who being not content with their fermes and fields whereupon they might liue honestly enough accor- ding to their state, doe thinke of the bying of other mens fields and searwes, that they may leaue their children a greater patrimonie, but when these also doe want abilitie they



cap 5 v 6

Epistle of S. James. 73

they must seeke mony some where or other, that they may haue wherewith to suffice their auarice. What shall he doe here which hath mony, wherewith he is able to satisfie their desire? Perhaps it will be an vnciuile thing to deny, and to giue frely or to lend, neither the law of God, nor the rule of charitie doth compell thee. What therfore wilt thou say, shall I do? He knoweth þ I haue mony, which if he shal not receiue, he wil cry out that he is forsaken of his friend, and so by denyng that which is asked, for a friend I get to my self an enemy. Is it lawfull therfore for me, for þ benefit of lending to couenant for vsury, especially seing þ I do not owe to him that asketh neyther by Gods law nor by the law of nature, that which he asketh? I owe almes to the pooze by the law of God and of nature. To him that needeth, but is strong and able to thriue with that he borroweth, I ought to lende by Gods lawe and by the lawe of nature. Here if I doe not render that which I owe, I do offende, and if I aske a rewarde for my bounden dutie, I breake the rule of Christ, and peruert the lawe of nature. But here I am not bounde neyther by Gods lawe nor by the lawe of nature. Wherefore if here I shewe any benefite which is not due, what forbiddeth that I may not bargayne to haue a rewarde for my benefit? and according to the receyued custome, to receyue five of the hundred euery yeare? I say that Usurie is not here properly committed, because that this benefite was free, whereunto thou wast not bounde neyther by the lawe of God nor of nature. For Usurie condemned by the worde of God is properly committed, when for the lending which thou owest freely by the lawe of God and of nature, thou requirest some thing more then the principall for the bounden dutie of lending. Hereunto pertayneth the rule of Gerson: Euery contract or bargayne, which by it owne kynde, or by the circumstances ought to be free, if a couenant of receyuing more than the principall, commeth betweene, it is named Usurie.

All taking of more than the principall is not condemned, neyther properly to be called vsurie.

VWhen it is vsurie to take more than the principall, and when it is not vsurie.

U. i. rie,

care great  
 an authority  
 is thing they  
 What must  
 slender then  
 are charynes:  
 other where,  
 engaged, a wo-  
 man giueth vn-  
 der naught. For  
 thy to them that  
 they be in the  
 they playnly re-  
 neede. Here-  
 comes me scarce  
 for wearing a  
 countenance of  
 charynes and  
 daughters seeking  
 hat their mother  
 they by intricate,  
 great personages  
 ch thing they doe  
 e gilded cuppes,  
 fles and sumptu-  
 images being got-  
 tencie and byane-  
 re are also in this  
 their termes and  
 enough accoy-  
 of other mens  
 their chyldeen a  
 want abilitie  
 they



cap 5 40

### A Commentarie vpon the

rie, and properly such only is named Usurie. Of this rule of Gerson it followeth, that it is not a bargaine of Usurie, which by the circumstances ought not to be free. Wherefore if I take any thing according to the appointment and limitation of the lawes, for the benefite of lending which is not due, that there may be equalitie, I doe not commit Usurie. I owe almes to the poore, I ought to lende to the needie. Wherefore? Bicause the ordinance of God and the lawe of nature doth require this. But to him that needeth not I ought of dutie by no lawe to lende. If therefore I deale or bargayne with him, a couenant being made betwene vs concerning receyuing somewhat more than the principall, Usurie is not properly committed, especially if the equalitie be kept which the Magistrate hath appointed. Wherefore in this kynde of dealing I allow the sentence of D. Aepinus, who writing vpon the 15. Psalme, rehearseth thre sortes of men, to wit, of beggers, of them that doe in very deede stande in neede (who notwithstanding are able to thriue with the mony that they borowe) and of them which are welchye, and haue whereupon they might liue honestly with their familie so that they were content with their meane. Of these thre kindes of men Aepinus doth learnedly dispute, and at length concludeth, that in the thirde kynde Usurie is not committed, so that otherwise there be no departing fro equalitie. Now it is naturall equitie that for a benefite, which by right we doe not owe, a benefite be rendred, that there may be equalitie. Concerning this equalitie, the determination of the Magistrate is to be hearde. The King of most commendable memoire *Christierne* the thirde, did prouide by a law, that no man shoulde receyue aboue fve euery yeare of the hundred. These limites and bondes he that doth passe, departeth from equalitie. But I woulde haue the godly alwayes to haue certayne sure aduertisements in their sight, which a little after I will annere.

It is naturall  
equitie to ren-  
der one good  
turne for ano-  
ther.

In



cap 5 R 6

Epistle of S. James. 74

In the first order of men I place marchauntes, to wit them, which haue not so great substance whereby they are able to maintayne themselves honestlye, but doe liue by trade of marchandise, and doe get gayne by the chaunging, carying out and bringing in of things, whereby often times they doe not a little gayne. It falleth out often with these, that they seeke to borowe mony, without which they cannot exercise their meane trade of marchandise. Here it is demaunded whether it be lawfull for the creditor to couenant for vsurie. I aunswere plainly that it is not lawfull. For both by the lawe of God and of nature thou doste owe to thy brother being in neede the dutie of lending. For when he doth in deede stande in neede, and thou art able without thy certayne hinderance to helpe him, thou doest offende if thou doe not helpe him, and thou doest also offende, if thou take any thing more than the principall for the bounden dutie of lending. But here are foure obseruations to be marked. The first concerneth marchants that are not content with their meane. The seconde pertayneth vnto societie. The thirde to the inheritance of wardes. The fourth is referred to the interest. Nowe as concerning the first obseruation, we must vnderstande, that no man ought by the lawe of God and of nature to lende vnto a verie riche marchant, whose great welth and substance is well knowne. For that which is lent is due to necessitie, and ought not to serue vnstable couetousnesse. Wherefore we may deale with this kynde of men, according to the rule which we gaue when we intreated of the fift sort of men. The seconde obseruation, which we sayd to pertayne vnto societie, is after this sort: a marchant boroweth money of thee, and thou doost agree with him for parte of the gayne vpon this condition, if he shall get any gayne by thy money. Here it is demaunded, whether it be lawfull for thee to couenant for parte of the gayne. I aunswere, it is lawfull so that thou wilt take

How we may lawfully co-  
uenant for  
part of the  
gayne of that  
which wee  
lende.

How we may  
lawfully co-  
uenant for  
part of the  
gayne of that  
which wee  
lende.

How we may  
lawfully co-  
uenant for  
part of the  
gayne of that  
which wee  
lende.

U.ii. part

of this rule  
of vsurie,  
wherein  
and  
which  
not commit  
to lende to the  
of God and  
to him that nee-  
deth. If therefore  
being made be-  
more than the  
ed, especially  
e hath appoin-  
allow the sen-  
15. Psalme, re-  
ggers, of them  
to notwithstanding  
they borowe)  
whereupon they  
that they were  
kindes of men  
geth concluded,  
mitted, so that  
licite. Now it is  
by right we doe  
may be equali-  
mination of the  
most commo-  
vide by a law,  
very peare of the  
doth passe, de-  
the godly al-  
in their sight,

In



cap 5 v. 6

### A Commentarie vpon the

part of the perill vpon thy selfe. For when this is done it doth not become vsurie. Thou maiest therefore for a yeare require fve of the hundred as part of the gaine, so that thou againe wilt suffer fve of the hundred to be abated of the principall, if he suffer damage. For he that couenaunteth onely with condition of the gayne and wilbe free from the losse, doth in very deede commit vsurie. Therefore he is found guiltie by the lawe of God and of nature.

Howe Gardians may lende the mony of the wardes committed ynto them.

But as concerning wardes, the Gardians of the wardes, that the inheritance wherewith they are put in trust be not by little and little wasted, may lend the money of the wardes to them that desire it especially to them that are of the richer sort, and for the benefit of lending and the vse of the money require that which is reasonable, that is, according to the limitation of the magistrate, fve of the hundred euery yeare. This kind of dealing is not to be counted vsurie. For neyther Gardians are bound to lende of that which is another mans, neither they which borrow, when as neyther diuine nor naturall bond or dette went before, can iustly refuse to be thankfull for a benefite receiued. The obseruation which pertayneth to the interest, doth also hinder the maner of vsurie. For if by deferring the payment of that which is borrowed the creditour be endamaged, equitie doth require that the dettour make a recompence for the damage. And this they cal the interest which they say doth arise, eyther because of the losse that commeth or because of the gaine that ceaseth. For if the dettour shall not paye that which he borrowed, at the time appoynted for the payment, naturall equitie requireth, that the dettour make recompence for the losse that came to the creditour thereby. The like is to be sayde of the gayne ceasing. But here let the lender beware that he vse not deceitfull ballances. Therefore charitie is to be added, which is the most iust rule of all contractes and bargaynes. This if it be sincere, will easilye finde equalitie.

Interest wherof it is sayd to come.

Charitie most necessarie in all kyndes of bargaynes.

¶



COMP 50 6

Epistle of S. James. 75

If other sortes of men be offered beside those that are rehearsed, it shall not be harde by the former rules to iudge, what is to be determined concerning them. For there shall easily be founde some likenesse in them with the former kyndes, which may dissolue the question.

Of the fourth.

It followeth that we speake of the fourth member of our partition, which shall contayne certayne admonitions, which may be vnto the godly as certayne consultations not only in this trade concerning vsurie, whereof we haue spoken now sufficiently: but also in euery kinde of contract or bargayne shall kepe vs in our dutie, so that we will giue godly eares vnto them.

The first, Paule. I. Tim. I. sayth: The ende of the commaundement is loue out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of fayth vnfayned. We sayde before that vsurie is therfore forbidden by the worde of God, that charitie may not be hurt among men. Nowe this rule of Paul willeth, that charitie proceede from a pure fountayne of the heart. Thou must take heede therefore, least that while thou doest outwardly pretende charitie towards thy neighbour, thy heart be uncleane, with the filthines whereof the dutie is defiled, which thou seemest to perforce to thy neyghbour. Charitie mozeouer requireth a good conscience, to wit, that thou mayst truly wienes before God, that in all thy actions thou seekest the glorie of God, and the profite of thy neighbour without falshoode or dissimulation. For whereas falshoode and dissimulation is, there charitie is banished, the conscience is spoyled, and fayth perisheth. Whereupon it followeth, that nothing is well done. Let this rule therefore of Paule be alwayes in our sight, whereby we may trie all our doings, as examined with a touchstone.

The first rule wherby we ought to examine our doings.

What things are required in loue that it may be true and sincere.

The seconde, Abstayne, sayth the Apostle, I. Thess. 5. The seconde from

A.iii.

from

is done it  
in a yeare  
time, so that  
be abated of  
it counten-  
wilbe free  
rie. Where-  
nd of nature.  
the wardes,  
it in truth be  
money of the  
them that are  
and the vie  
de, that is,  
r, fine of the  
g is not to be  
count to lende  
which borrow,  
or dette went  
benefite recei-  
to the interest,  
if by deferring  
e creditour be  
recour make a  
al the interest  
if the losse that  
h. For if the  
s, at the time  
re requireth,  
the that came  
sayde of the  
e that he vse  
is to be ad-  
res and bar-  
be equalitie.  
It



cap 5 vers 5

# A Commentarie vpon the

rule of our  
actions.

from all appearance of euill. This rule is exceeding neces-  
sarye. For it admonisheth that we doe flie not onely those  
thinges that are euill in very deede, but also that we ab-  
staine altogether from the appearance of euill, that is, that  
we auoyde whatsoever pretendeth any outward shewe of  
euill. Let this rule admonish the godly, that they doe ab-  
staine not onely from those bargaines which are in deede  
euill and unlawfull: but also from those which haue anye  
appearance of euill.

The third ad-  
monition  
concerning  
our doings.

Our mynde  
must in no  
wise be pro-  
phaned with  
the filthy Idol  
of auarice.

Psal. 119. 36.

The feare of  
God and co-  
uetousnes can  
not agree to-  
gether.

Our heart of  
it self is prone  
vnto coue-  
tousnes.

The third, Paule. Hebr. 13. sayth: *Let your conuersation  
be without couetousnes.* This precept doth not belong on-  
ly to the mind, to wit, that the minde be not prophaned  
with the most filthy idol of couetousnes: but also to out-  
ward maners. For he will haue vs so to liue, that no man  
may lay vpon vs the fault of couetousnes. For when the  
conuersation beareth witness of the couetousnesse of the  
heart, godlynes and fayth without all dout are banished.  
Wherefore it is not without good aduise ment which  
Dauid prayeth when he sayth: *Encline my heart vnto thy  
testimonies, and not vnto couetousnes.* Here Dauid setteth  
obedience toward God and couetousnes one agaynst the  
other, signifying that their condition is such, that where  
the one is the other cannot be. If therefore the heart bee  
infected with the vice of couetousnes, sincere religion to-  
ward God can in no wise be there. If a couetous mā doth  
sometime pretend some obedience toward God, it is mere  
hypocristie. But contrariwise, if the hearte be feruent in  
the loue of God and in his religion, couetousnes hath no  
place there. For what agreement hath the idoll of aua-  
rice with the temple of God? Furthermore because the  
most holy King Dauid desireth of the Lord that his heart  
may be inclined to the testimonies of God, and not vnto  
couetousnes, he doth manifestly shew, that the heart of it  
owne accord is caried to couetousnes, and cannot deliuer  
it selfe from couetousnes except God putteth to his hand.

The



cop 5 ps

Epistle of S. James. 76

The precept therefore of Paule : Let your conuersation be without couetousnes, I would haue the godly to haue alwaye before their eyes, and this prayer of Dauid : Incline my heart to thy testimonies and not to couetousnes, I woulde haue earnestly to be made, which if it were done, there would be lesse striving amōg the godly about vsury.

The fourth, Paule will haue Christians so to liue, that our commoditie be not euill spoken of among the heathen. Now it is certaine, by the trade of vsury is infamous amōg the Turks, and all prophane nations. What therfoze will they say of Christians, if they shall heare that we doe contend with the most prophane nations, and exceede them in vniust bargaines? These thinges trulye ought woꝛthely to admonish all godly men, that they would rather liue after a meaner sort, then that they woulde giue occasion that the name of God and the Gospell of Christ should be euill spoken of among prophane men. We ought with all examples of godlines & honesty to allure and prouoke them, that they woulde togither with vs worship Christ and be saued, but, O good God, what is done? vnder a Christian name in manye lurketh a Turkish heart.

The fourth admonition concerning our actions specially in bargaining.

The fift, Paule commaundeth vs to auoyde offence, least that the weake being offended at our doings doe stumple. And he will not haue this only that we absteine from thinges that are euill by them selues, but also from thinges lawfull. It was lawfull for Paule by christian libertie to eate flesh, but what sayth he? before I will offend my brother, I will not eate flashe while the worlde standeth. So farre doth the dutie of those which are godly in deede extend, not onely to beware that they doe not defile themselves with any spot of sinne, but also that they be not by any meanes a cause to ocher of falling, whereby they may haue occasion not to iudge so well of vs.

The fift admonition

1. Cor. 8. 13.

The sixt, let the dignitie of a Christian name come in to our mind, Which name ought trulye not without most iust

The sixt admonition which ought

A.iiii.

ing recele  
onely those  
that we ab  
that is, that  
ard shewe of  
they doe ab  
are in deede  
thy haue anye  
conuersation  
not belong on  
not prophaned  
not also to out  
that no man  
For when the  
oulnesse of the  
are banished,  
ferment which  
heart vnto thy  
Dauid letterly  
me agaynst the  
th, that where  
the heart bee  
ere religion to  
uous ma both  
God, it is mere  
re be feruent in  
ousnes hath no  
the idoll of ana  
ye because the  
d that his heart  
y, and not vnto  
the heart of it  
cannot deliuer  
to his hand,  
The



cap 5 v 6

## A Commentarie vpon the

so moue vs to  
deale truly &  
to doe well.

just cause to be holy among Christians. It is a shamefull and an vnseemly thing for a man that is borne of a noble and famous house to follow trades that are seruile and contemptible, least that he doth any whit distaine the nobilitie of the house whereof he commeth: much more vnseemly is it that the children of God doe defile themselues with any blemish which afterwarde may spread ouer the whole familie of God.

The seuenth  
admonition  
which ought  
to feare vs  
from doing  
vniustly.

The seuenth, punishment in the heires is to be feared. For if any man by vniust gaine heapeth by much goods for his heires, he shall not escape punishment. For God doth eyther in the sight of them take out of the worlde them who they hoped should haue bene their heires, that they may see their owne vanitie and amend, or els he punisheth the heires by forsaking them, suffering them to runne headlong into sundrie vices, that those thinges which were vniustly gotten may most dishonestly be dispersed and perish, vnto the certayne destruction of the heires.

The eyght ad-  
monition  
which ought  
to withdrawe  
vs fro wrong-  
full getting  
of riches.

The eyght, let this cogitation come into the mind: that oftentimes the children of pooze and honest parents haue come vnto verie great dignities, & that not by the meanes of riches, which they had not, but by the benefite of excellent sciences of honestie, of wisdom, of prudence. I could name euen domesticall examples, but because they are knowne, I let them passe. But contrariwise that many, to whom great riches were left of their forefathers, haue bin eyther brought vnto extreme pouertie through their owne fault, or els haue bine as painted tables profitable to nothing in the common weale, altogither like to the wooers of *Penelope* and the swine of *Epicure*, borne to consume the fruite of the earth. Let this cogitation admonish the godly, that they doe rather leaue vnto their children vertue and a good name, then without vertue many riches, which children are seldome wont to vse but to their



cap 5 08

Epistle of S. James. 77

their owne destruction. This saying of Cicero is worthe of remembrance : the best inheritance which is giuen of fathers to their childzen , and moze excellent then euerye patrimonie, is the glozie of vertue and noble actes . And agayne : a father can leaue no monument moze notable or famous , than a sonne which is the image of his maners, of his vertue, constancie, godlynes and witte . I hope that I haue profitably added these admonitions to the disputation of vsurie, nowe I desire the godly reader that he will weigh them godly, and take them into his counsell in all his busines.

The glory of vertue an excellent patrimonie.

Of the fift.

It remaineth, which in the last place we propounded, to speake of the office of the ministers of the worde, whose dutie is in the steade of God, as Preachers sent of him, to lift by their voyce as a trumpet, and to accuse the sinnes of men hauing no regard of persons : yet not without spirituall wisdom, which taketh heede that nothing be done vnseemely or amisse . First therefore let the Ministers of the worde earnestly and sharply condemne euery vnjust bargayne, yea and that vsurie which is condemned by the worde of God, and let them shewe that no vnjust bargayne can stande with true godlynes . Then lette them diligently see, that they iudge not too rashlye or too sharply of bargaynes which the magistrate approueth. Let them put a difference betwene those bargaynes which God in his manifest worde hath prohibited, and those which the lawes doe wisely ordeyne for the maintaining of humane societie, and let them not vnder a pretence of vsurie condemne those bargaynes in which in deede there is no vsurie. Moreover let them reforme as much as they can, manifest errors in bargaynes, by Ecclesiasticall discipline, and that not of any priuate affection, but with sage and wyle counsell, least that correction out of due

Aduertisements to the ministers of Gods word, what they ought to do concerning vsurie and bargaynes.

It is the ministers dutie as much as they are able rightly to reforme manifest errors in contracts and bargaynes.

¶.i. season

Whatefall of a noble scoule and tame the more vn- desile them: may spread a- s to be feared, y much goods mt. For God of the worde r heires, that or els he pu- lizing them to those thinges vnjustly be dis- truction of the the mind: that parents haue by the means of exel- ent gyndence. I m because they wntie that ma- ir forefathers, uertie through ed tables pro- together like to pware, honne cogitation ad- me unto their at vertue ma- to vie but to etc



cap 5 v 5

## A Commentarie vpon the

The Church  
must be trou-  
bled as little  
as may be.

A moderation  
to be obserued  
of godly mi-  
nisters in re-  
forming ma-  
ners.

How the mi-  
nisters of God  
ought to ad-  
monish con-  
cerning the  
right vse of  
riches.

season doth hurt more than profite. Furthermore, although the Preachers of God can not correct all faultes in bargaynes, yet let them not trouble the Church, but commend the thing vnto God, and pray that he will put to his hande. For where there is any perill of schisme, the sentence of excommunication being already pronounced against many, I iudge that they ought altogether to abstayne from excommunication. The tares truly are to be rooted out (as *Augustine* sayth) so that the wheate be not pulled by together with them. Wherefore in amending maners let them followe this moderation: let them correct the horrible sinnes of many, not with might, but with counsell, let them reforme them not with threating but with admonishing. But contrariwise, let them chastyce the sinnes of a fewe with seueritie, least that they take force and inuade the multitude. Which when it is done, they are more hardly corrected. Finally, let them most diligently admonithe the rich men that they suffer not them selues to be deceyued by their riches, and that they take heede least that they being beguyled by the deceptfull reasons of the foolishhe fleshe, doe lose the sayth, and fall into the snares of Satan. Let them admonithe also that the Lorde did not say in bayne: that it is an harde thing for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of heauen. Let them nowe and then commend the true vse of riches vnto them: Let them shewe that Christ woulde therefore haue in his Church certayne needie and naked members of his bodie, that he might trie the rich men whether they did by a true sayth loue him in his members or no. These aduertisements we haue giuen to the Ministers of the Gospell which are of the simpler sorte, the other, especially they that are more exercised in the ministerie, doe easily vnderstande by themselves howe the worde of God is to be decided and applyed.

Of



Epistle of S. James.

comp 5 D-6

78

Of Lending.

**L**ending doth followe, which doth not alienate a thing into the proper possession of the receyuer, as it is done in the former bargaynes, but doth only alienate the vse of the thing, and that for a time, that the very same thing in due time may be restored agayne. This contract hath the name of the vse of it, bicause the things that we bozowe, doe bring vnto vs some commoditie and profite. Let this kynde of contract be without deceyt both in the lender and also in the bozower, and let it be subiect to the lawe of charitie.

Lending what it is.

Of hyring and letting out.

**L**et the bargaynes of hyring and letting out be subiect to the custome and condition of the time and place, yet so, that there be no departing from the lawe of charitie. He therefore which letteth out the vse of his thing or his labour, according to the custome of the Realme, and other circumstances, maye require a pryce or rewarde of him that hireth it. He which will not paye it, is vniust. Herevnto me thinketh pertayneth the bargayne which the Lawyers call *emphuteusis*, that is, planting or graffing, therefore so called, bicause they that in times past did hire barren fields, did make them better by planting and graffing, that is, by good ordering and vslage, and did pay to the owners a certayne yerely rent for the vse of the fields, the right neuertheles of the possession remainyng in the letter of them out. This particular was afterwarde translated to a generall, that is, to the letting out of all fieldes and houses. This contract therefore concerning tilling and planting, consisteth in the dealing with the ground and lande only, wherin fruite commeth to him that hyreth, by tilling and due ordering: but the letter of it out doth remaine the true owner of the lande, and therefore accor-

What is to be obserued in hyring and letting out.

¶.ii. ding

though  
 a in bar  
 our com  
 will put to  
 thine, the  
 pronounced  
 ther to ab  
 ay are to be  
 teate be not  
 n amending  
 let them cog  
 nit, but with  
 accening but  
 rem chalyce  
 at they take  
 on it is done,  
 them most di  
 ffer not them  
 hat they take  
 receyfull rea  
 and fall into  
 also that the  
 be thing for a  
 m. Let them  
 as vnto them  
 we haue in his  
 ers of his bo  
 they did by  
 These aduers  
 the Gospell  
 specially they  
 easily vnder  
 is to be de

of



cap 5. v. 6

# A Commentarie vpon the

ding to the lawes and customes of countries, he doth iustly receyue part of the fruite by the bargayne.

*Of the contract of societie.*

The contract of societie wherein it consisteth.

**F**or that which they call the contract of societie, that is, whereas one bestoweth money only, and another onely labour, or one bestoweth money and labour, another onely money or labour, or both bestow money and labour, but not equally: we must follow the foundation without deceipt: doe not that to an other which thou wilt not haue done to thy selfe. He which contrarie to this foundation shall deceiue his felow is vniust, and hath broken the lawes of brotherly societie. These things I thought good to adde concerning contracts and bargaines that I might herein haue consideration of the consciences of the godly. A full and perfect doctrine of bargaines may be taken out of the writings of the lawyers, who of purpose as cunning and skillfull in these matters, doe write of them most copiously, neither is there any cause, that any man should thinke that the ordinances or decrees of wise gouernoures concerning bargaines or other offices profitable in the life of man, are against the Gospell. For, as before we haue witnessed, the Gospell doth not abolish ciuill ordinances. For the Lorde sayth: *My kingdome is not of this worlde.* The Gospell therefore leaueth to euery nation the lawes therof, which varying not from the tenne commaundements do tend to the mayntayning of commō weales and families. Therefore the godly may most safely follow this rule: All bargaynes approued of the lawfull magistrate, which hath the chiefe gouernment, are lawfull vnto Christians, so as they doe not playnely disagree with the lawe of nature and the ten commaundements. And therefore the godly may vse them freely with a good conscience without offending God, no otherwise then these element s, which are common both to the godly and vngodly.

Ioh. 18. 36.

A rule which the godly may safely follow in all kindes of bargains.

A



Epistle of S. James.

79

cap 5 & 6

A Question concerning the goods of the Church.

Whether it be lawfull for heires to require againe the goods, which their forefathers haue bestowed vpon the Church for the celebrating of Masses: the Masses nowe ceasing, ye being quite abolished.

The Answer.

A Difference must be put betweene the next ende of the giuing and the last ende. The next ende of the giuing was the celebrating of the Masse, which, seeing it is vngodlye, they doe well, which abolishe the custome thereof. The last ende was the mayntaining of the worshippe and seruice of God. To this ende, bicause it is good and holpe, ought all the goodes to be referred, which in time past were giuen to the celebrating of Masses.

Two endes to be considered in the giuing of goods to the celebrating of masses. &c.

An obiection.

They obiekt, that in many of their deedes of gift this clause is expressed: If such custome of celebrating Masse or of singing shall cease, let the heires haue power to receyue againe those goods which their forefathers haue giuen to the celebrating of Masses. &c.

The Answer.

They that bestowed those goods vpon the Church, did erre in the particular, and not in the general. The particular is the celebration of the Masse. The generall is the worship and seruice of God. The heires therefore being better instructed, ought to correct the faultes of their forefathers, and conuert that to the true worship of God, which was appoynted for the prophaning of the supper of the Lorde. Vea I thinke that this is rather the office of the godly magistrate, that these goodes be not suffered to serue the auarice of priuate men. Flora an harlot of Rome bestowed the substance that she had, which was verpe great, to the maintayning of a yearely pageant or play at

Flora an harlot of Rome how she bequethed her goods and to what end they were afterward employed.

£.iii.

Rome.



comp 5 26

## A Commentarie vpon the

Rome. When the most graue censor *Caro* thought good that this play should be abolished for the dishonestie thereof, and for the filthy gestures and behauiour of harlots, the heires of *Flora*, the playes of *Flora* being abolished, do require againe the goods that *Flora* had giuen. But the Senate of Rome did most wisely iudge, that these goods ought not to returne to the heires, but that the purpose of *Flora* which gaue them was to be considered, whose last will was, that the goods which she had giuen should serue the common weale of Rome. For *Flora* although shee erred in the particular, yet did she not erre in the generall. Wherefore that the generall might be kept, the Senate of Rome did most rightly iudge that those goods which *Flora* had giuen should not be restored to the heires which required them, bicause the playes of *Flora* were abolished. After the same maner those goods that are giuen to the maintayning of masses, ought not to be restored to the heires, the masses ceassing, but are to be conuerted to the generall end, that they may serue the Church of God, that is, that they may be giuen to them that teach, to them that learne, to them that haue deserued, to them that are keepers and defenders of the Church. They ought not to serue the pleasures of men, but the necessities of y<sup>e</sup> Church. So also dooth *Bartolus* a most excellent lawyer iudge, which toucheth this very case concerning masses, in his commentaries vpon the law. Of that which is giuen to the citie. The wordes of *Bartolus* are these: If he that maketh his last will and testament hath left an hundred poundes for singing masses, which masses cannot be song because of the commaundement to the contrarpe, that which was left ought to be conuerted to an other vse. The same *Bartolus* doth a little before set downe the generall sentence: If, sayth he, he that maketh his last will, addech a maner or condition which is vnpossible (to wit by reason of the prohibition) for some lawfull and honest ende, then

Howe such goods ought to be bestowed which in times past haue bine giuen to the maintayning of superstition. The iudgement of *Bartolus* a singular lawyer.



Epistle of S. James. 80

then if it can not be fulfilled after that sort, which he hath sayd, it is converted to some other lawfull vse.

*The grienousnes of the sinne of them which couetously and greedily get into their handes the goods of the Church.*

**T**hey which couetously and greedily get into they handes the goods of the Church, doe violate both tables. For they are both vngodly against God, and also cruell toward the Church and the members thereof. Inasmuch as they doe both with sacriledge vsurpe vnto themselves those things that are giuen to the worship of God, & also doe spoyle the needie members of the Church of their liuing. Cicero affirmeth that he doth more grienously offend, which wrongfully taketh any thing out of the common treasure, then he which stealeth the treasure of a private man. Wherefore it is certayne that they doe farre more grienously sinne which wrongfully possesse the goods of the Church. The Lord condemmeth them, which doe not bestow somewhat vpon the poore of that substance which they haue: how shall we thinke that they shall escape the iudgement of God, which greedily get vnto themselves those thinges that belong to others? He is reprobued by the voyce of God, which doth not suffer iniurie with a patient minde: how may it be that he shoulde scape vnpunished which doeth iniurie to the members of Christ? God is not deceiued with subtiltie, he doth not receiue vniust excuses. Wherefoeuer these couetous and greedy getters into their handes of the goods of the church doe turne them selues they cannot auoyde but that they are guiltie of the \*seuenth precept. For when the Lorde saith: Thou shalt not steale, he forbiddeth vs by any pretence of right to chalenge to our selues vniustly any thing which belongeth to an other. But although many at this day wrongfully possessing the goods of the Church, doe

They which wrogfully enioy the goods of the church are guiltie of both tables.

\* Note that he followeth not the same diuision of the commandments which we commonly do

¶.iiii.

seeme

ought good  
the there  
of barlots,  
abolish, no  
men. But the  
at these goods  
the purpose of  
a, whose last  
an would serue  
through the re  
in the generall  
at, the Senate  
the goods which  
the heires which  
were abolished,  
are giuen to the  
re restored to the  
converted to the  
rich of God, that  
teach, to them  
to them that are  
they ought not to  
ries of Church.  
the lawper iudge,  
masses, in his  
th is giuen to the  
e: If he that ma  
left an hundred  
s cannot be long  
contrarye, that  
in other vse. The  
me the generall  
last will, addeth  
(to wit by rea  
and honest ende,  
the



cap 5 b 5

## A Commentarie vpon the

The testimo-  
nie of a mans  
owne consci-  
ence against  
himselfe a  
thing most  
griuous.

Sacrilege shall  
not escape vn-  
punished with-  
out earnest  
and heartie  
repentance.

God will in  
his time iustly  
punish the  
scorners and  
despisers of  
his worde,

seeme pleasantly to enioy them, yet they cary about with them their conscience as a witness, which although it be-  
ing as it were seared with an hote iron, doth for a time  
rest securely: neuertheless at length, and that at the point  
of death, being as it were raised out of a dead sleepe, it  
shall be in stede of a thousand witnesses, and shall more  
griuously afflict the heart, then any renting or tearing of  
the body can beere and torment the body. Then they shall  
truly perceiue, that it was not for nothing which in time  
past was sayde of *Esay. chap. 33. Wo to thee that spoylest,  
and wast not spoyled: and doest wickedly and they did not  
wickedly against thee: when thou shalt cease to spoyle, thou  
shalt be spoyled: when thou shalt make an end of doing wic-  
kedly, they shall doe wickedly against thee.* They shall  
at length perceiue that these wordes of the Prophet doe  
not vanish away into the aer. These men thinke that there  
is no daunger, because they doe not feele the present hand  
of God, whom notwithstanding the historie of the Jewish  
people doth sufficiently teach, that the punishment of the  
that commit sacrilege is not taken away although it be de-  
ferred for a time for their sakes, whom the Lord by his  
goodnes dooth call vnto repentance. The Jewish people  
contemned the voice of the Prophets, but at the last, the  
measure of their sinnes being filled vp, they came to vtter  
destruction. At this day the voyce of the Lord doth sounde  
in our eares, and we sleepe securely on eyther side with-  
out repentance, but our sinnes being come to the full, the  
Lord will poure out his wrath also vpon vs, and so that  
will come to passe which *Jeremie* hath foretold: *As a  
theefe that is taken with the deede commeth to shame: e-  
uen so shalt thou come to confuson.* By which word the  
spirite of God doth signifie, that it will come to passe, that  
they at length shall suffer due punishment, which mocking  
and scorning at the word of God, do thinke that all things  
are lawfull vnto them which the lust and sensualitie of the  
minde



cap 5 66

# Epistle of S. James.

8r

minde doth perswade.

*A Question of the right vse of the goods of the Church*

**B**Ecause the goodes of the Church haue bin a long time in great abuse, it is with good cause enquired, what is the true and lawfull vse of the goods of the Church, and vpon whom these goods ought to be bestowed. For one doth not therefore by good right possesse the goods of the Church eyther because he weareth a hooode, or because his voice soundeth in the church, ye or because he vnderstandeth the Latine tongue, in which errour many haue hithereto bin: But here the holy fathers are to be heard, which can iudge with a sincere iudgement. *Gratian* rehearsing the sentence of *Augustine*, doth witnes that the stipends of the Church, that is, the yearely reuenews and giftes, ought to be distributed into four partes. Whereof the first ought to be giuen to the Bysshop and his familie, for maintayning his office and hospitalitie, not to maintaine riot, pride, chaines of gold, ringes of gold, not to feede palfreys, not to keepe a courtly rout: but to necessarie and honest sustentation, least that he being deceived and caried away with the riches of this worlde, doe forget his dutie, as it is sufficiently knowne to haue come to passe in this realme in time past. The second part ought to be giuen to the clergie, whereof I make thre orders or sortes. In the first are they which teach and learne in the church, to whom stipendes and exhibition is due, least that being compelled with pouertie they forsake their office. In the second are they which in time past haue serued the Church, but now eyther griued with sicknes or wasted with old age, not able to execute their office. To these liberall sustentation of the goods of the Church is due. In the third order or sort are they, which doe deserue it by their labour and trauail in the studies which are profitable to the Church, these ought as souldiers to be maintained

The sentence of Augustine concerning the right distribution of the goodes of the Church.

The first part of the Church goodes.

The seconde part of the goods of the Church, howe it ought to be bestowed.

P.i.

tayned

be  
about twich  
ough it be  
for a time  
at the point  
dead sleepe, it  
nd shall more  
g or tearing of  
then they shall  
which in time  
e that spoyle,  
nd they did not  
e to spoyle, thou  
of doing wic-  
e. They shal  
e Prophet doe  
hinke that there  
e present hand  
e of the Jew with  
unishment of the  
although it be de-  
the Lord by his  
e Jew with people  
e at the last, the  
ey came to bitter  
Lord doth sounde  
eyther side with-  
e to the full, the  
m vs, and so that  
e forgotten: As a  
erth to shame: 2-  
which word the  
me to passe, that  
which mocking  
e that al things  
ualitie of the  
minde



cap 5 b 6

# A Commentarie vpon the

The right bestowing of the third part of the goodes of the Church.

The fourth part of the goodes of the Church howe to be employed.

Abuses of the goods of the Church.

Ciuiil government not meete for the ministerie.

tained to the vse of the Church. The thirde part ought to be bestowed vpon the poore, which are such in dede, whose lyfe past hath ben honest. For they that haue spent their goodes in hunting and companying with harlots, are vnworthie to be nourished or maintayned with the goods of the Church. Let these begge for their liuing. The fourth part ought to be reserued for the building and repaying of temples and houses. This sentence of *Augustine* is a godly and a true partition of the goodes of the Church. That holy man will not haue dogges and harlots to be maintayned with the goodes of the Church, he will not haue ydle bellies and sluggishe drones to become fatte by the goodes of the Church. He will not haue swarmes of Monks, most vnprofitable lumps of earth, to liue delicately of the goodes of the Church, he will not haue smoke and vayne soundes of wordes to be solde for the treasure of the Church, but he requireth a iust distribution according to the proportion of Geometrie, which hath regarde both of the office and also of the labour in assigning stipendes. And although I allowe this sentence of *Augustine*, concerning the partition of the goods of the Church, neuertheles, this with good reason I adde: First, bicause ciuil gouernement is not meete for Bishops, it is lawfull for godly Kings and Princes to transfere gouernement, rule, ciuil iurisdiction, furniture and riches of Bishoppes vnto themselves, so that they conuert them to the preserving of the Church of God, that is, it is lawfull for godly Kings and Princes to fence and fortifie themselves with these goodes, that they may haue wherewith they may defende the Church agaynst enemies, and whereby they may be bountifull towards the godly exiles and others that haue well deserued of the Church and of the common weale. But that we doe rightly say that ciuil government is not meete for Bishops, those sayings doe sufficientely shewe, which put a difference betweene the ministerie of the



cap 5 v 8  
Epistle of S. James.

82

the Gospell and ciuill gouernement. As my father sent me (sayth the Lorde) so sende I you. My kingdome is not of this worlde. The kings of the Gentiles reigne ouer them, but ye shall not be so. The weapons of our warfare are not carnall. But the Papistes obiect that certayne Pro- uinces were giuen to the Romane Bishoppe of Con- stantine. If we graunt this to be true, though it be most false, yet though that power was giuen to Syluester, it was not lawfull for him to receyue it in that function in which he was, and to deliuer it to his successours. Bicause euerye one ought to doe the duties of his vo- cation, according to the saying: Studie to be quiet, and to meddle with your owne businesse. The Bishop ought to teach, the King to governe and ouersee armies, stipends, warres, the peace of the bodies. These things therefore are not to be committed to a pastour, but let euery one in his calling be mindefull of his rule: Doe your owne bu- sinesse. Agayne, let euery one walke as God hath called him. Agayne, doe those things deuoutly which God hath commaunded thee. The saying therefore, but it shall not be so with you, maye not onely be vnderstande thus, that Christ doth not giue ciuill power with the ministerie of the Gospell, but also that it be not taken or exercised of him that is in y ministerie. When as the Papists obiect the aunswere of the Lorde to the saying: Beholde here are two swordes, they doe sufficiently declare that they deale Sophistically and subtillly. For when he aunswereth that it is ynough, he signifyeth the complaynt concerning the two sortes of enimies. It is ynough that the swordes both of the high Priests and also of Pilate are drawne against you. Hereof without all doubt is concluded that ciuill go- uernement is not meete for Bishoppes and Pastours. Wherefore Christierne the thirde, king of Denmarke, did well and godly, when he transferred the dominion and rule of Bishops vnto himselfe, to preserue and maintaine

Ioh. 20. 21. & 18. 36.

Luke. 22. 25.

2. Cor. 10. 4.

1. Thes. 4. 11.

Euery one must meddle with his owne busines.

P. ii.

the



cap 5 65.7 8

## A Commentarie vpon the

the studies necessarie to the Church, and to repressse the enemies of the Gospell. Moreover, wheresoeuer the reuenues of the Church are as yet moze plentifull, as where it is well looked vnto them, of whome it is sayde, a godly King or Prince ought as a steward and nourisher of the Church, to haue regarde of the goods that remaine, and especially to take heede that the goodes of the Church be not possessed of ydle bellies, which neyther haue serued the Church at any time, neyther doe serue it, neyther are able to serue eyther it or the cōmon weale. For as the Lorde aboue is the defender of other publike goods: so is he also the defender of the goods of the Church. And as it belongeth to the king, if a citie doe bestowe the goodes of the treasure yll and amisse, to prouide and see that they be moze diligently and profitably bestowed: so also doth it belong to Kings and Princes to haue a care of the goodes of the Church, that those things which haue hitherto serued superstition, may nowe be applyed to their true vles. But in the meane season let euery one take hede, least that vnder a pretence of godlynes he conuert the goodes of the Church to riot and prophane vles.

7 Be pacient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lorde.

An exhortation to the pore to be pacient.

Vpon the rebuking of rich men he bringeth in an exhortation to godly poore men, that when they see what kynde of ende there shall be of them, which abuse their riches in this lyfe, they may rather paciendly beare the present miseries, then that they will desire the riches of rich men with perill of their saluation. And this is the proposition of the exhortation.

Beholde the husbandman vwaiteth for the precious fruite of the earth, and hath long pacience for it, vntill he receyue the earely and the latter rayne.

8 Be ye also pacient therefore, and settle your hearts: for the comming of the Lorde draweth neare.

The



cap 5 1/2 9 12 11  
Epistle of S. James.

83

The first reason of the proposition is taken of the example of husbandmen. Euen as husbandmen labouring in tilling and sowing their fieldes, doe patiently looke for frute: so the godly ought by pacience to looke for the ende of faith, which is the saluation of their soules. That is called former rayne, which falleth in the Spring time, the seede being nowe newly cast into the earth. That is called latter rayne, which falleth in the Autumne, when the eares of corne are full, whereby the graines do swell and are made bigger. The reason of the calling thereof is, bicause the whole time that the seede is in the ground, is compared to one day, y beginning whereof is the Spring time and the ende the Autumne.

The first reason of the exhortation to pacience.

The ende of our sayth.

9 Grudge not one against an other, brethren, least ye be condemned: beholde, the Iudge standeth before the doore.

The seconde reason taken from the punishment of impacience. By the name of grudging is signified an inward complaynt, which proceedeth from impacience. To stand before the doore, is to be neare at hande.

The seconde reason of the exhortation to pacience.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets for an ensample of suffering aduersitie, and of long pacience, vvhich haue spoken in the name of the Lorde.

The thirde reason of the example of the Prophetes, who though they did supplie the place of the Lorde in preaching the worde, yet they were not free from affliction, wherein they declared exceeding great pacience. See the II. Chap. of the Epistle to the Hebrues.

The third reason of the exhortation to pacience.

11 Behold vve count them blessed vvhich endure.

The fourth reason taken from thinges that are adiacent or adioyned one to an other. They are sayde to be blessed which suffer, *Matth. 5.* Therefore it behoueth vs patiently to suffer present afflictions. But they are blessed two manner of wayes, by feeling and by the euent or ende. By feeling, because they doe in deede vnder the Crosse feele the

The fourth reason of the exhortation to pacience.

P.iii.

presence



cap 5 v<sup>o</sup> n

## A Commentarie vpon the

presence of God comforting them. By euent or ende, because they shal in deede be deliuered, according to the promise of Christ, *Matth. 5.*

Ye haue heard of the paciēce of Iob, and haue knownen vvhath ende the Lord made.

The fift reason of the exhortation to paciēce.

The fift reason taken of the ende of present remedies, which he sheweth by propounding the famous example of holy Iob. Iob was afflicted aboue measure, but the ende which the Lord gaue was most ioyfull. For the time of affliction being ouercome, he receyued cōfort, and was gloriously deliuered from all his afflictions. And so in our present troubles and miseries, our eyes are to be fastened not so much vpon these miseries, as vpon the ioyfull ende of them.

X

Howe God is mercifull and how he sheweth mercie.

For the Lorde is very pitifull and mercifull. The confirmation of the fift reason taken from the affection of God toward them, which doe beare afflictions patiently in sayth. Because oftentimes mention is made in the Scripture of the mercy of God and that for most iust cause, and God is saide to be mercifull, and to shew mercy and compassion. (He is mercifull inasmuch as he is in deede moued with our miseries, and doth as it were suffer with vs. He sheweth mercy and compassion because he reacheth his hand to vs being in miserie, and deliuereth vs out of miserie) I will briezly reherse what thinges ought to come into our mind, as often as mention is made of the mercy of God toward vs. If first y<sup>e</sup> object of mercy is to be thought vpon, which is y<sup>e</sup> miserie of mākind wherby y<sup>e</sup> whole race of mankind is in it selfe most miserably lost, subiect to the tyrāny of y<sup>e</sup> deuil, in danger of al calamities, spirituall & corporall. Secondly, the cause of this miserie is to be considered, which is sin, the most horrible and most filthy thing of all things, y<sup>e</sup> most iust punishment whereof is euerlasting torment of soules & bodies. Thirdly, the infinite loue of God toward mākind is to be reuolued in the minde,

Most worthy cogitations which ought to come into our myndes as often as we heare the mercie of God toward vs mentioned.

The seconde cogitation. The thirde cogitation.



cap 5 677

Epistle of S. James. 84

minde, that God hath not utterly cast away mankind for  
 so great filthines and uncleannes. Fourthly let the sacri-  
 fice of the sonne of God be thought vpon, whereby he hel-  
 peth our miserie, and maketh a full satisfaccion for sinne.  
 By thinking vpon this sacrifice the holy fathers haue  
 comforted themselues in their sacrifices. To this sacrifice  
 Dauid hath regard, as often as in the Psalmes he ear-  
 nestly desireth the mercye of God, which psalme 51. doth  
 sufficiently shew, where he maketh his prayer in these  
 wordes: *Haue mercy on me, O Lorde, according to thy lo-  
 uing kindenes, according vnto the multitude of thy mercies  
 wipe away my wickednes. Whē he saith, wipe away, he hath  
 respect vnto the bloud of the mediatur as he doth more  
 plainly shewe in the seuenth verse, where he maketh men-  
 tion of the satisfaccion for sinne, for so he saith: Purge thou  
 me with hyssop and I shall be cleane* Fifthly, repentance or  
 conuersion is here required, without which we are not  
 made partakers of this vspeakable price, of the sacrifice  
 of the sonne of God. Hereunto pertayne many sayinges  
 of the Prophets. 2. Paral. 30. *The Lord your God is grati-  
 ous and mercifull, and will not turne away his face from  
 you, if ye conuert vnto him. Iere. 3. Turne againe ye chil-  
 dren, and so shall I heare your backturninges. Againe chap.  
 18. Let euery man turne from his euil way, and take vpon  
 him the thing that is good and right, and your iniquitie shal  
 not turne to your destruction: To this conuersion the Gos-  
 pelli calleth vs: Repent, for the kingdom of God is at hand.  
 And Christ him selfe saith: I came no to call the iust but  
 sinners to repentance. Sixthly, a continuall thankfulness in  
 our whole life with extolling and setting forth the glorie  
 of God is required, and a certayne holy carefullnes is to  
 be had in gouerning our maners that we may seeme in  
 heart, mouth, tongue, and in our whole conuersation to ex-  
 toll the mercy of God. Seuenibly, because our weakenes  
 is great, which is increased by thinking sometime vpon*

The fourth.

The fifth cogitation concerning the mercy of God

The sixth cogitation or rather meditation.

The seventh cogitation.

V. iiii, our

ende, he  
 to the pro  
 haue kno  
 remedies,  
 is example of  
 but the ende  
 the time of al  
 and was gla  
 And so in out  
 to be fastened  
 he top full ende  
 ifull.  
 rom the affecti-  
 fictions pati-  
 tion is made in  
 hat for most iust  
 to shew mercy  
 much as he is in  
 ty as it were iust  
 fission because he  
 and deliuereth  
 what thinges  
 mention is made  
 tinct of mercy is  
 making wherby  
 miserably lost,  
 of al calamities,  
 se of this miserie  
 errible and most  
 lament wherof  
 Thirdly, the in-  
 uolued in the  
 minde,



cap 5 of n

## A Commentarie vpon the

our particularitie, sometime vpon our vnworthines, we must thinke that the mercy of God is not contayned within narrow bounds, neither that the greatnes of our sinnes doe exceede it, but that it is extended to all the endes of the world, and doth by infinite meanes abound aboue sinne.

The Lord is most abundant and rich in mercie.

Luke. 1. 50.

2. Pet. 3. 9.

Why the mercy of God is in the scripture compared to oyle.

The blessed Virgin sayth: *The mercy of God is from generation to generation on them that feare him.* And Peter sayth: *The Lord is patient towarde vs, and would haue no man to perish, but would all men to come to repentance.* Of this most rich mercy of God S. Cyrill writeth in this manner. The mount of Oliues doth signifie the heigth and abundance of the diuine mercy plentifully shewed vnto vs by the comming of the sonne of God in the flesh. The mercy of God is often times in the Scriptures expressed by the name of oyle, because the nature of oyle doth agree with the maner and condition thereof. For oyle is caried aboue other licours and swimmeth aboue them, so the mercy of God is aboue all his workes, and doth moze appeare vnto men then the rest. For mercy exceedeth iudgement: and his mercy is ouer all his workes. Moreouer, oyle doth mitigate the griefes of woundes, and doth heale swellings and sores: but the mercy of God doth heale the sores of our soules, and diueth away all faintnes of sinne, as the Prophet sayth: *Who forgiveth all thy wickednes and healeth all thine infirmities, who satisfieth thy mouth with good things, and crowneth thee with mercy and louing kindnes.* Finally they that should come into the place of wrastring or struing, did come forth into the middelt being annoynted with oyle, whereby their bodyes might be moze pliable and fitte for that kinde of exercise: so the Lord sheweth vnto them his mercy which are about to strue against the ayrie powers, with it he preuenteth vs and giueth vs strength, whereby we being fortified in so harde a fight with his helpe, maye at the last goe awaye conquerers. In thee saith the Prophet, *I shall be deliue-*

Psal. 103. 3. 4.

Psal. 118. 28.

red



Epistle of S. James. 85

red from tentation, and with the helpe of my God I shall leape ouer the wall, And agayne : God is my light and sal- Pfal. 27. 1. 2. nation, whom then shall I feare ? God is the strength of my life, of whom then shall I be afrayde ? Though an hoste of men were layde in campe agaynst me, yet shall not myne heart be afrayde : and though there rose vp warre agaynst me, yet I will put my trust in him. Lastly in another place: My strength will I ascribe vnto thee : for thou art the God of my refuge. My mercifull God will preuent me. Pfal. 59. 9. 10. ]

Augustine in a certayne sermon sayth : His mercye is most abundant, and his beneuolence large, which hath redeemed vs with the bloud of his sonne, when because of our sinnes we were nothing. For he did some great thing, when he created man to his owne image and similitude. But because we woulde be made nothing by sinning, and tooke the issue of mortallitie of our parents, & were made a masse of sinne (a masse of wraeth) neuertheles it pleased him by his mercie to redeeme vs with so great a price, he gaue for vs the bloude of his only sonne innocently bozne, innocently liuing, innocently dying, who hath redeemed vs with so great a price. He wil not haue them perish whō he hath bought, he hath not bought them whō he wil destroy, but he hath bought thē whō he will quicken & make aliuē. A description of the great mercy of God toward man.

12 But before al things, my brethré, svveare not, neyther by heauen, nor by earth, nor by any other oth: but let you yea be yea, and your nay, nay, leaſt ye fall into condemnation.

As he condemneth a rathe custome of swearing, setting down the punishment therof: so he prescribeth a maner of affirming and denying, when he sayth : Let your yea be yea, and your nay, nay, that is, that which is to be affirmed simply and without an oth, affirme, and that which is simply to be denied, denie.

ines, we  
gnad with  
f our times  
endes of the  
above sinne.  
d is from ge-  
And Peter  
would haue no  
penance. Wh  
th in this ma-  
e heigh and a-  
beued into vs  
e fleshe. The  
res expressed  
ple doth agree  
ople is caried  
e them, so the  
doth more ap-  
ceedeth iudge-  
es. Howouer,  
, and doth heale  
nd doth heale the  
innes of sinne,  
ll by wickednes  
sisteth thy mouth  
mercy and louing  
into the place of  
the middell be-  
dyes might be  
exercite : so the  
th are about to  
e preuenteth vs  
f justified in so  
last goc awaye  
b all be delinea-  
re 4



cap 5 612

# A Commentarie vpon the

Of an Othe.

**B**ecause the Anabaptistes abuse this saying to abolishe euery othe, I iudge it expedient to declare this place moze at large, that it may be euident howe farre it is lawfull to sweare and howe farre not, and that I may keepe a certayne maner in the handling hereof, I will speake of these things in order. First I will generally shewe that it is lawfull sometime to sweare. Then I will inquire out those things, which are required to a lawfull oth, that it may appeare which is lawfull, and which is unlawfull. Moreover, whom we must beleue when they haue sworn, for we must not beleue euery one that hath sworne. In the last place I will refell the argumentes of the Anabaptistes.

¶ What points he meaneth to entreat of concerning an oth.

Of the first.

**T**hat othes are sometime lawfull, it is taught by the fixe arguments following. The first, the seconde precept of the ten commaundements, doth manifestly require the religion or right vsing of an othe. For when it forbideth the abuse of the name of God, it requireth the lawfull vse thereof, to wit, inuocation of God, part whereof is a religious othe. The second, the declaration of the \*second precept Deut. 6. doth proue the same, for there Moses sayth: *Thou shalt sweare by his name*, this saying doth both witnes that an othe is lawfull, and also doth shewe a maner of swearing. For God will not haue, that the Israelites sweare by the names of Devils, after the maner of the Gentiles, but by his name. The third, Exod. 22. The commaundement of the Lorde is this, when there is controuersie concerning a thing committed to another to keepe, if the thing be taken awape, God hath commaunded, that he to whom it was committed to keepe, do purge himselfe with an oth. The fourth, the many examples of  
saints

Six firme reasons that it is lawfull sometime to take an oth.

\* They diuide not the commaundements after the same maner that we do, which neuertheles is a thing indifferent.



cap 5. v. 12

Epistle of S. James. 86

Saints and holy men, as of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and of many others, who in no case woulde haue eyther sworn themselues or required othes of other, except they had thought that it had bene lawfull to swear. But the othes of them doe make a rule of a lawfull othe, as I will afterwards declare. The first, the example of Christ and of the Apostles in the newe testament. Howe often doth Christ vse this manner of swearing: Verily, verily, &c. Howe often doth Paule swear, and also the other Apostles. These things the Apostles had in no wise done, and much lesse Christ, if euery othe had bene unlawfull. The sixt, the end of an oth, Heb. 6. And an oth. sayth he, for confirmation is among men an ende of all strife. We haue firme reasons, by which it is plainly shewed that euerye othe is not unlawfull, as the Anabaptistes crie out: Howe let vs go to that which we propounded in the seconde place.

Of the seconde.

**I**n an othe which is an affirming or denying of some thing, with a calling to wicnes of the name of God, or of some other thing, which ought to be vnto vs sacred and vniuolate, foure things are required, which are diligently to be considered in euery othe: as the partes of the othe, the causes, the affection of him that sweareth, and the ende of swearing. The partes are two, the one is the calling of God to wicnes about the thing which we affirme or denie. For he that sweareth, when he hath no other witness, appealeth to God, from whome nothing is hidde, and desireth his testimonie, and confirmeth by an othe that that which he sayth proceedeth from God as a wicnes. Hereupon it followeth, that we must not flie to the diuine testimonie, but when as both other witnesss can not be had, and the matter is so knowne to him that sweareth, that he knoweth that he doth not rashly appeale to so great a wicnes. The other is the condition of the vengeance

What an oth is.

Foure things to be considered in an oth.

The first parte of an oth.

The second part of an oth.

3.ii.

geance

to adolibe  
re this place  
ere it is law  
may keepe a  
will speake of  
shewe that it  
ill inquire out  
all oth, that it  
is unlawfull.  
y haue sworn,  
y sworne. In  
s of the Ana  
  
taught by the  
the seconde pre  
miffily require  
when it forbid  
reth the lawfull  
re whereof is a  
n of the -second  
y these holes  
is saying doth  
do doth shewe a  
me, that the M  
after the maner  
ords, Ex. 12. 23.  
when there is  
to another to  
my commaun  
repe, do purge  
examples of  
saints



cap 5 v. n

# A Commentarie vpon the

geance of God against him which sweareth and deceyueth in swearing. For if he doth not escape punishment, which doth falsly alledge the testimonie of an earthly king, what shall be done to him which maketh God a lyer? This condition ought to call backe all men not onely from per-  
 iurie, but also from lightnes of swearing. The causes of swearing are two, the former is the ignorance of the thing which is in hande, the latter the weyghtines thereof. For in trifling matters, and of none or small importance, we must not flie to an othe. For the name of God ought to be more sacred and holy vnto vs, than that we should flie vnto it by swearing, except exceeding great necessitie doth vrge vs. The affection of him that sweareth ought to be double, for he ought to be moued thereunto both w<sup>th</sup> hatred of a lie, and with the loue of the truth. Wherefoeuer this affection is not, the name of God is taken in vayne. The ende of swearing is also double, one, that the truth may be known, another, that God maye be honoured, by whome it is sworne. Of these foure rightly conferred together, it shall easily appeare, when it is lawfull to sweare, and when not. Certayne doe allowe this distinction, that a publike othe only, that is, required of the lawfull magistrate, is lawfull, but not a priuate othe, that is, which one maketh of his owne accorde, eyther in his owne or in another mans cause. But bicause many examples do proue euen priuate othes, I do not receyue this distinction. Howe I define that to be a lawfull othe which is taken in the feare of God to confirme the truth of that thing, the ignorance whereof woulde eyther hinder the glorie of God, or hurt the safegarde or good name of our neyghbourz.

Two principall causes of an oth.

The affections which ought to be in him that sweareth.

Two endes of swearing.

The definition of a lawfull othe.

## Of the third.

The othes of wicked men

**N**ow is to be declared whom we must belecue, when they haue sworne. For we must not belecue euerye one, no though he haue sworne. The Poet Menander saith:  
 write



cap 5 v n

Epistle of S. James. 87

write the oth of wicked men in the water. He signifieth therefore by this signe, that it is bayne that wicked men sweare. For he which doth playnly transgresse the other commaundements of God, as with idolatrie, vniustice, tyrannie, drunkennes, adulterie, haunting the compaigne of harlots, and with such like: he will easily also contemne God with swearing. Wherefore let neyther the godly magistrate nor any other easily approue such men hauing sworne. Paule swearing in these wordes: God is my witness. Forthwith addeth, Whom I serue in my spirite, signifying that we must beleue them that feare God if they shall sweare concerning any thing. For they that being boyde of fayth can not worship God, howe are they to be thought to worship him with the religion or right blessing of an oth? Howe wilt thou giue part to him, from whom thou hast taken the whole?

are vayne and not to be beleued.

Rom. 1.9.

VVhen we must beleue when they sweare.

Of the fourth.

Now let vs see what foundations the Anabaptists rest vpon. First they bring the saying of the Lorde Matth. 5. I say vnto you, sweare not at all. Secondly they bryge the wordes of James: Sweare not my brethren, neyther by heauen, nor by earth, nor by any other oth. Let, saith the Lorde, your communication be yea, yea: Nay, nay. For whatsoeuer is more then these, commeth of euil. These foundations the Anabaptists leane vnto, to whom I would yeeld, if that the former reasons did not better instruct me. But that it may be vnderstand what the prohibition of the Lorde meaneth, which seemeth to be vniuersall, we must mark the purpose of Christ in this whole sermon of workes. It is not the purpose of the Lorde to correct the lawe of his father, but to disclose and repproue the errours of the interpreters of the lawe. The lawe of the father is: thou shalt sweare by my name. This lawe the Lorde doth not abolish, but doth rather mayntaine it, whyles that he reprehendeth the corrupting thereof. The

The foundations which the Anabaptists leane vnto in taking away al othes and swearing.

A declaration of the saying of Christ, wherein the Anabaptistes affirme that he doth forbid all kynde of swearing.

3.iii.

Phari:

receyuech  
em, which  
sing, what  
per? This  
y from per-  
be causes of  
of the thing  
thereof. For  
oyance, we  
ought to be  
ould sic unto  
ie doth bryge  
to be double,  
atred of a lie,  
this affection  
The ende of  
ay be knowen,  
whome it is  
yther, it shall  
and when not.  
a publike othe  
case, is lawfull,  
maketh of his  
another mans  
e enen private  
doine I decline  
to the feare of  
the ignorance  
God, or hurt  
at.  
believe, when  
decue euerye  
under faith:  
write



cap 5  
p 2

# A Commentarie vpon the

How the Phari-  
sies corrup-  
ted the lawe  
of God con-  
cerning swea-  
ring.

Pharises of this lawe concluded after this sort: God hath commaunded that we sweare by his name, therefore we may sweare for euery cause and after euery sort. This erroneous consequent the Lord reprehendeth when he saith: *Thou shalt not forswear thy selfe, but shalt performe thine othes to the Lord. But I say vnto you, sweare not at all, neyther by heauen. &c.* The generall word at al ought to be referred to the maner of swearing then receiued, to wit, to sweare for euery cause and after euery sorte according to the maner of prophane men. Here therefore Christe prohibiteh his Disciples and them that trulye feare the Lorde to sweare rashly for euerie cause and after euerie sort. For he will haue the name of God to be reuerensed and worshipped moze religiously then that it be taken in vayne. James likewise doth not abolish the commaundement of God concerning the religion or right vsing of an oth, but he doth onely correct the custome of swearing rashly and after euery sort. For the lawfull maner of swearing is reckened among the promises of the Gospell: *Iere. 4. Thou shalt sweare, The Lord liueth, in truth, in equitie, and righteousnes.* This is not a saying of commaunding but of promising, that the true Israell may become a true worshipper of God, and that the Gentiles may embrace the true religion of God. A prooffe whereof shal be, that they shall sweare after this maner: *the Lord liueth, and not after this: Baal, Saturne or Iupiter liueth.* But that which is sayde *Osee. 4. Neyther shall ye sweare the Lorde liueth:* is a voyce of threatenng. For he threatneth the vnthankfull Jewes, that their countrie shall be made desolate for their stubboynnes and disobedience against God, that in the place of the true worship of God shall be set the worship of Idoles, whereupon it shal come to passe, that they shal not sweare any moze: *the Lorde liueth, but Baal liueth, &c.* The Anabaptists bryge the forme prescribed of the Lorde: *Let your communicatiop be*  
yea.

How James  
is to be vn-  
derstand  
when he for-  
biddeth swea-  
ring.

The saying of  
Osee expoun-  
ded wherein  
he seemeth to  
forbid swea-  
ring.



Epistle of S. James. 88

yea, yea: nay, nay. What meaneth the Lorde by these wordes? that in stede of a rash oth they vse constant & aduised talke. The Lord therefore requireth constancie in our sayings, that our yea be yea, and our nay be nay. He doth not forbid but that it is lawfull for vs to flie to a religious oth, when the weightines of the cause doth so require: but they do more forcibly byge that which followeth. For, sayth Christ, *Whatsoeuer is added more then these commeth of euill*, That is, that which is rashly added more then a simple affirming or denying, no weightie cause requiring, it commeth of euill, that is, of an euill affection of the minde, or of an euill conscience, or of the deuell himselfe. He sayth not that a lawfull oth commeth of euill, but a rash oth onely which is taken with a certayne lightnes, of an euill custome, and for euery light cause. Againe, it may sometime fall out that an oth commeth not of the euill of him that sweareth but of him that doth not beleue a bare and simple affirmation, which when it commeth to passe a religious oth shall not therefore be euill. For euery thing is not euill which commeth of euill, in as much as it falleth out often times, that thole thinges that are euell are the occasions of those thinges that are good: as when we say, that good lawes doe come of euell maners and conditions, to wit, by occasion not by effect.

A rash oth

13 Is any among you afflicted, let him pray.

Briefe admonitions are annexed, and first that he which is afflicted and suffreth persecution, doe pray. For there is no more present remedie agaynst the miseries of this world then prayer proceeding from fayth. *Whatsoeuer sayth the Lord, ye desire when ye pray, beleue that ye shall haue it, and it shall be done vnto you.* And the reason thereof is very wel noted in the booke of Iudith chap. 9. where the most holy woman doth thus say in her prayer: *In the prayer of the humble and meeke hath thy pleasure bin euermore.* And Psalm. 49: *Call vpon me in the day of trouble*

Prayer a speciall remedy in affliction. Mar. 11. 24.

3.iiii.

and

e  
 out: God  
 therefore  
 loze. This  
 when he  
 shall per-  
 you, sweare  
 all word at al  
 ng then recei-  
 ter every soite  
 Oze therefore  
 em that euilpe  
 cause and al  
 God to be re-  
 y then that it  
 not abolish the  
 eligion or right  
 the custome of  
 the lawfull ma-  
 promises of the  
 e Lord liueth, in  
 s not a saying of  
 the Israell may  
 at the Gentiles  
 yproote whereof  
 name: the Lord  
 e Jupiter liueth,  
 e shall ye sweare  
 For he threata  
 countie shall be  
 disobedience a-  
 worship of God  
 pon it that come  
 me: the Lorde  
 etitis byge the  
 mania atiqu be  
 114



cap 5 b. 19

## A Commentarie vpon the

and I will deliuer thee.

Is any merie? let him sing.

What it is to sing when we are merie and in prosperitie.

He counseleth him that is in prosperitie, to sing: by which counsel the Apostle teacheth three thinges. For first, when he biddeth vs sing, he will haue vs acknowledge God to be the author of our prosperitie. Secondly, he will haue vs extoll and prayse him, giuing him thankes for his benefites. Thirdly that we doe not with the world abuse our prosperitie to the contempt of God, but that we doe rather rest in the author thereof singing vnto him, and not attributing any thing to our selues. But the worlde dooth contrary: for it neyther acknowledgeth God to be the author of the felicitie which it enioyeth, neyther is it thankfull to him, so farre is it of that it singeth vnto God, yea it dooth rather furiously triumph with prophane ioye and gladnes.

14 Is any sicke among you? Let him call for the elders of the Church, and let them pray for him, and anoynt him vwith oyle in the name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of fayth shall saue the sicke, and the Lord shall raise him vp: and if he haue committed sinnes, they shalbe forgiven him.

Why anointing the sick with oyle is not now used, but taken away.

He counseleth him that is sicke, what he must doe. First let him send for the elders as Phisitians of his soule. Then let the elders being called pray for the sicke and anoint him with oyle, not that he may die, but that he may miraculously be restozed to health, as y<sup>e</sup> Apostle here plainly speaketh. But seing that oyle was an outward signe of the gift of healing, which gift continued for a time to confirme the doctrine in the primitive Church, and now the Church hath not that gift: It were sond and foolish to keepe still the signe without the thing signified by the signe. That I may in the meane season say nothing concerning the idolatrous adiurations and trust in the anointing, wherein was thought to be a most sure aide and defence







cap 5 167

# A Commentarie vpon the

the mindes and affections, which being sicke, many times offences doe as it were certaine little sozes burst forth.

For the prayer of a righteous man auayleth much, if it be feruent.

A reason of that which went before, taken of the effect of godly prayer. And note that as he requireth one thing in him that prayeth: so he requireth an other in the prayer it selfe. In him that prayeth, he requireth righteousness: wherefore Paule also biddeth vs lift vp pure hands. This righteousness consisteth in two things, to wit, that he which is about to praye, doth fully perswade himselfe that his sin is forgiven him, and that he cast of all purpose of sinning. For he that doth not this, doth lose his labour. In the prayer he requireth efficacie, that is, a singular feruentnesse which proceedeth from sayth, whereby a man determineth that he is heard through the merit and intercession of the Lorde his mediatour.

What the Apostle requireth in him that prayeth.

What is required in the prayer of the righteous.

17 Helias vvas a man vnder infirmities euen as vve are, and he prayed earnestlye that it might not rayne, and it rayned not on the earth by the space of three yeares, and sixe moneths.

18 And he prayed agayne, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth brought forth her fruite.

A reason confirming the prayer of the righteous to be effectuell.

A confirmation of the last reason by an example: Helias prayed effectually.

Helias vvas righteous, Therefore the prayer of the righteous is effectuell. In steade of the *Maior* or first proposition of this argument the confirmation thereof is set downe, whereof reade 17. Chap. lib. 3 of Kings. But least any man excepts and say that that was done because of the singular holyness and merits of the man, he preuenteth them and sayth that he was subiect to like passions as we are, inasmuch as he was subiect to the same affections and infirmities of the corrupt nature, that we are.



Epistle of S. James. 90

- 19 Brethren, if any of you hath erred from the truth, and some man hath converted him.
- 20 Let him know that he which hath converted the sinner from going astray out of his way, shall save a soule from death, and shall hyde a multitude of sinnes.

Diligence in furthering the saluation of their brethren is commended to the goodlye, that one call another from the errour of his way, that is, of doctrine and of life. Which he that doth, first saue the soule of him that did erre: secondly, hideth a multitude of sinnes, in as much as a sinner being converted by his admonition is reconciled to God, and his sins are covered with God and are thoroughly forgotten. But howe can a man saue the soule of a man from death? And how shall he hide a multitude of sinnes? By the ministerie, and not by his owne proper power. So Paule sayth that he did beget the Galathians, and writing vnto Timothe he sayth: *In doing this thou shalt both saue thy selfe and them that heare thee.* Although it belongeth to God only to saue, yet he adioyneth vs vnto him as it were associates, and ascribeth vnto vs for the ministeries sake, that, which in very dede belongeth only vnto himselfe. This ought to make y<sup>e</sup> dignity of y<sup>e</sup> ministerie of the word more commendable vnto vs, when we heare that we in procuring the saluation of men, are workers together with God, to whom he doth impart also diuine honour after a sorte. Howe a man doth hide a multitude of sinnes I haue nowe declared: he doth it not by power, but by doctrine and pardon. By doctrine he cauleth the sinner to turne himselfe vnto God, who onely clenseth sin: by pardon while he hideth the faults of his brother. Here vnto pertayneth that saying: *Loue covereth the multitude of sinnes.* The Papistes, which of this saying doe gather, that man by his loue doth merite remission of sinnes, are deceyued, as the setting of one contrarie agaynst the other

Uve must as much as in vs is, call our brethren from errour both of doctrine and lyfe.

Howe a man may saue the soule of a man.

1. Tim. 4. 16.

Howe a man hideth a multitude of sinnes.

1. Pet. 4. 8.

Aa. ii.

ther



cap 5 v 20

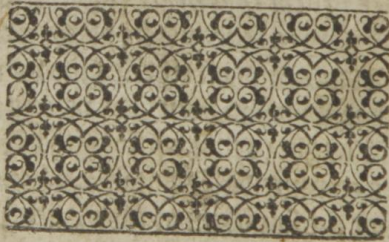
*A Commentarie vpon. &c.*

ther in Salomon doth sufficiently shewe : for there hatred  
and loue are set one agaynst another , as contrarie causes  
in contrarie effects : Hatred (sayth he) stirreth vp strifes :  
but loue couereth the multitude of sinnes . For as ha-  
tred is the cause of contentions among men,  
so loue couereth faultes, epyther by  
reforming them, oz by  
winking at  
them.

FINIS.

*James Head*  
*James Head*

*Head*



*[Large, illegible handwritten signature]*

~~*[Illegible scribbled-out text]*~~



De.  
there hatred  
miracule causes  
wreth by strifes:  
s. For as ha  
ng men,  
r by

XXXXXXXXXX

*[Handwritten scribble]*



